



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 08

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 701: Full Attack!

Wenren Jianyin loudly spoke, "So when they send their superior cultivators out, the only thing we can do is to watch them? Nothing we can do about it? We just sigh? Where the hell are our superior cultivators in the Kingdom of Lan-Feng?"

The other generals were all stressed and ashamed.

[That's true. Superior cultivators of other kingdoms would join their army and become generals, risking their lives for their country. We must have our own superior cultivators back in our country too!]

[I believe we have no less superior cultivators than the Kingdom of Chen!]

[But where the hell are those men?]

[If they don't show up and never want to join us, will we be suppressed by Kingdom of Chen forever?]

"We shouldn't blame them, Uncle," Wenren Chuchu blandly spoke beside him. "Cultivators in our kingdom, many of them are willing to help. However, even if they can make it here in time, they may still not be as good as the ones in the Kingdom of Chen. Superior cultivators normally fight on one's own. They barely fight in a battlefield.

"The Kingdom of Chen, for the first time, recruited this many superior cultivators to serve the army in thousands of years. I am sure even one hundred decrees Chen Xuantian made could never get those men over to participate in this war.

"To make those men come willingly, follow orders, and behave themselves in the army, there must be a powerful leader!

"This leader has to be powerful and respectful to all the others. Moreover, he must be rich. He had to be able to pay all the expenses, and he must be powerful. He needs to be related to the

power in their court. He can get military identities for the martial artists. At last, those cultivators should have been gathered together long ago and taking orders from somebody before they attended this war. Otherwise, it was impossible that they can work with each other so well, like they are truly an army!

"All that matters to them is that they have such a man."

Wenren Chuchu sighed. "But we don't!"

Wenren Jianyin frowned and then was enlightened. He exclaimed, "You mean... Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall? Could it be... did Feng Monarch join this too? He planned the missions to their martial artists?"

[Join? Plan?]

Wenren Chuchu smiled bitterly.

[Just show up and give a plan on that?]

"Maybe. I am not sure." Wenren Chuchu sighed.

Wenren Jianyin and other generals all didn't understand her. They looked at her confusedly, waiting for her to explain it.

"I should go back and rest." She just ignored them and turned around, then left.

She was thinking. [Is it him? I should go check on it tonight!]

She didn't go on to explain more. What could she say anyway? That Feng Monarch was in Iron Peak?

She couldn't say that. If she said so, the soldiers would definitely lose morale!

Master Bai, who had flew up through the sky and rose up to the upper realm, was a legend in the Land of Han-Yang. He pointed Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall as his only qualified rival. That made Feng Monarch the other legend in Land of Han-Yang!

There was news about how Feng Monarch wiped out two great

sects of Land of Han-Yang within one day. Two great sects, in two places far from each other, completely vanished within one day. What a horrible power!

He was simply unstoppable in people's hearts!

Wenren Chuchu was sure Feng Zhiling wasn't that powerful, but all the others thought he was!

The news was approved by the five noble clans. It was certain to most people in the world!

The night passed.

Wenren Chuchu finally didn't go after thinking for a long time.

She had a perfect excuse not to see him. Her side had just experienced a loss. If Ye Xiao sent Ning Biluo or Zhao Pingtian to assassinate Wenren Jianyin, she had to be around. It was almost impossible to survive against those two killers!

In fact, deep in her heart, she just didn't know how to face that guy. If that guy was truly Feng Zhiling, what should she do?

That was why she gave up the plan!

In the tent, Wenren Jianyin and the others were still discussing about whether Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall joined the battle. They had been through quite a tough night.

A man's fame was like a tree's shadow. No matter how good enough a person was for his fame or not, fame was fame. When people believe that somebody was as powerful as they think, it didn't matter if it was true or not. Fame didn't always fit the truth!

Legends about Feng Zhiling was such a puffery!

It made him a lot more terrifying than he should be!

The next day, when the sun just rose up.

Wenren Jianyin's men started to move.

"We can't just stay here and wait! Their elites are too good. One

can defeat a hundred of us. However, no man can fight continually forever. We have much more men than they are. We can't just stay here defending ourselves. That is such a disgrace!"

"We have to make the attack and take the initiative. Disrupt their plans and make them hold their defense in a negative situation."

"Two hundred thousand soldiers in a team, let's set up a wave shape attacking formation! Cover every spot of them. Do not focus on any point. Keep attacking until we break the Iron Peak! Send out a one hundred thousand men team to cut the trees and make more ladders. Keep supplying ladders to other teams!"

"One million and four hundred thousand men into seven teams. One team after another, we keep attacking. Take turns. I want to take down Iron Peak within three days! Capture Ye Xiao and march for Chen-Xing City!"

Wenren Jianyin gave his order.

That was a risky and cruel order. In his life, this was the first time he ever gave this kind of order. He would never give another in the future either.

The first, also the last time!

The reason was simple. The current situation in the battlefield had driven him into craziness. He had to be crazy.

The war was going into a good phase for the Kingdom of Chen. It seemed the entire world was their enemies, but they were actually getting through the crisis safely. The only chance to defeat the Kingdom of Chen was in Iron Peak now.

Zhan Qianshan was fighting Su Dingguo. It was a tough fight. As it went on, eventually, both sides would be exhausted. Su Dingguo might not be able to defeat Zhan Qianshan, but Zhan Qianshan would also be unable to break through the defense!

That was the truth.

Chapter 702: Different Perspectives

General Lan was doing a good job guarding the south; the grassland folks were wiped out in the north...

The four sides of Kingdom of Chen, only one side was in danger.

Kingdom of Lan-Feng was the only hope.

If they couldn't take down Iron Peak before Ye Nantian came and go directly to the Chen-Xing City, they would fail after all that had been done.

Their entire kingdom spent so much to prepare for this war, however, if they lost the battle eventually, they would bear the shame forever, as they were the ones who wanted this so badly!

However, this was not Wenren Jianyin's biggest concern. He would love to sacrifice himself for the war after all.

The biggest problem to him was that the Grassland Folks were all wiped out. The coming decades, the Kingdom of Chen would totally be free from the stress of the north. In other words, Ye Nantian's Northern Army could go to other sides from now on. The Kingdom of Chen had an invincible army and lots of money for military acts. It would be easy for them to conquer the entire world!

If he didn't seize the opportunity and destroyed the Kingdom of Chen this time, it wouldn't take long for the Kingdom of Chen to destroy Kingdom of Lan-Feng!

He had to do this for him, for his country, and for his people. That was why he had to be crazy about this!

If he could break Iron Peak, he would win a bright future for his kingdom!

The cruel fight was started by his order.

In fact, he wanted to arrange all his man to attack the Iron Peak

and take it down once and for all. However, he had to do this wave shape formation... taking turns to attack... Iron Peak was not a small tower. There were three sides he could attack, however, Two hundred thousand men standing there would fill the space up!

If he sent more people to crowd up at once, his men would crowd together and became easy targets to the archers...

Ye Xiao was watching the enemies attacking one wave after another. He was shocked.

He, however, wasn't surprised by the horrible attack. In fact...

Soul power gathered in the air and Boundless Space absorbed it all. The energy was like rivers running to the ocean, running into Brother Egg. The patterns on its eggshell was getting clearer and clearer. Mountains, rivers, stars, animals... images showed up on the shell...

There were some starlights on the shell too.

All these things proved that Brother Egg was growing!

Actually, Brother Egg was quite close to hatching.

It was obvious. It only needed more gatherings.

However, Ye Xiao didn't feel happy about it at all!

It took men's lives to feed it!

Lives of good men!

Men of the Kingdom of Chen or men of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, they were all warriors with nerves!

However, their soul became this power, which was like some cheap Chinese cabbages, abandoned and collected.

No, they weren't even as valuable as cabbages! They were free to waste!

Ye Xiao couldn't understand it. Why?

Why would the kingdoms have to destroy each other? No matter

how hard it was, they were so eager to kill other kings. Could they escape the day when they were buried into the dust decades later by killing other kingdoms? And yet no matter how hard they tried to put their kingdom together, it would collapse in the future, sooner or later.

History went on while kingdoms fell and fell after another!

Those generals in the battle might have a better reason. They wanted to be remembered because of a wonderful victory they had. However, what good did it have for the soldiers? They were so innocent!

"If people all think this way, then everybody just stay at home and sleep till the world ends. How about that? Just hold our wives and kids. Don't worry about making money. Don't ever go out to work." Song Jue sneered.

"You think I am wrong about it?" Ye Xiao was shocked.

He believed he was right. If there was no war in the world, people would only live in peace and the world would be better!

"Of course you are wrong. Pah. You are just not making any sense!" Song Jue spat and looked at Ye Xiao. "Look. You are young. I don't know where the hell you get these stupid thoughts from. You are purely viewing all this from the perspective of a god, like we are all ants.

"Your thoughts, your views, and your mind, they are all the same stupid. You are truly son of Ye Nantian. When you father just came to Land of Han-Yang, he had the same thoughts. After staying here for all these years, he finally understands it. You kid, you are nothing but naive and young!

"For you, all that they are fighting for, all that they are willing to sacrifice for, means nothing! Why would you have such a thought anyway? I think you are putting yourself too high. You see this in a shamefully high perspective.

"Who do you think you are? Huh? Who do you think you are judging?"

"People are in different positions, living different lives. How can you just put them in the same spot?"

"Don't be mad. Let me ask you this. You work so hard, you cultivate, you fight, you snatch, you do sh*ts, for what? What do you want in the first place? Look. Think about it. Deep inside you, what makes you different from the men you spoke of? Are you really that different?"

Song Jue sneered at Ye Xiao, "You are smart enough to know that in the eyes of those gods in Human Realm Upon Heavens, those great figures in Qing-Yun Realm mean nothing. No matter how hard they work, if they can't break the boundary of Qing-Yun Realm, they are nothing different as those lying under the dust!"

Ye Xiao stayed silent. Suddenly, he spoke in a deep voice, "That's right. I put myself too high! I judge others while ignoring the same truth about myself! I am naive and young!"

He was enlightened. Eventually, it all turned bright in his heart.

Different perspectives made different views on the same thing.

One hundred gold might mean life for beggars, but it might not be much for regular people—all in all, it was better than nothing. For the rich, it was nothing!

They have different perspectives. That is why.

Ye Xiao just foolishly ignored other people's perspectives, and he made a judgement according to the perspective of himself only.

...

Chapter 703: Ye Xiao? Ye Xiao?

"Men all have ambitions. A man without ambition? Impossible. Don't mention those great saints to me now. Even those saints in the myth have ambitions." Song Jue blandly spoke, "Somebody wants to be invincible. Some wants to be immortal. Some wants to be rich. Some wants power. Even saints have ambitions. They want their names to be written in the history, passing on their fames...

"The generals... The capable ones want to expand the territory for their kingdom and leave their names in the annals of history. Regular ones want to get promoted, marry a pretty woman and father some sons. Soldiers just want to get the money and feed their families, or maybe luckily get on the league of generals in the future.

"Everybody is fighting for personal interest."

Song Jue said, "I will say the same. Men in different positions have different perspectives. When a soldier becomes a general, he will want much more than just feed his families. He will want to be promoted and get more money. He will want power to rule an army. However, when he becomes a commander, a great general, he has a different goal to chase. He will want fame and to be remembered in the future.

"Sometimes, you have to be in a certain position to make judgement on certain things! A beggar can't even eat. If he talked about serving the kingdom and creating a better world for people... even if it has that possibility, people would tease him! What do you have to better this world when you can barely keep yourself breathing?

"Goals show different ambitions in different phases of a man. Life may be boring for regular people, but such life is a dream to beggars. The rich think nothing special about their wealthy life,

but regular people long for it. Officials live in a high position in the society, and that is exactly what the rich guys and the scholars want. Some influential officials in the court are living the dream of those who are eager for power... There are more like these!

"Ambition drives the world! It is the most valuable thing mankind has!

"When a man becomes a small official in a place, he may get bribes. When he climbs up to a certain position, say he is only holding less power than the king himself... would he even bother thinking about making money? What he longs for changes..."

He sneered, "Now what? Will you think of me like you father does? He always said that my theories are extreme."

Ye Xiao laughed. "I will not! You have extreme thoughts, but you are right. I believe my father wouldn't say you are wrong about this."

Song Jue laughed. He was happy. He casually swayed his sword and over a dozen soldiers of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng were knocked off the wall. He continued talking, "Martial artists like us have ambitions too. However, what we want, people in Land of Han-Yang wouldn't understand. In fact, for the men in Human Realm Upon Heavens, what we want is just nothing.

"In their eyes, those who have reached the peak of Qing-Yun Realm, like Xue Danru, Xuan Bing and Xiao Monarch, no matter how marvelous they are in Qing-Yun Realm, they are weak. In their eyes, these figures were only a joke. Acting like they were conquerors with their lousy capability, that was arrogant overestimation for the men in Human Realm Upon Heavens."

"Now think about it. Aren't you just like those guys high in Human Realm Upon Heavens?" Song Jue said.

Ye Xiao was shocked. However, he didn't seem so interested in the long speech. He said, "Xue Danru? Xuan Bing? Are they both

women? Xiao Monarch? Who is that?"

Ye Xiao asked while knowing the answer.

Song Jue humphed. "Yes, women! So what? Can't women be superior cultivators? Xue Danru and Xuan Bing, they both are the strongest figures in Qing-Yun Realm. Xiao Monarch... Hmm. His name is also Ye Xiao, the same as you!"

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao!"

Song Jue half closed his eyes. "That's it. Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao. Does it make you feel proud? Well. Compared to him, you are weaker than an ant! He could kill you by blowing! He can kill you with a fart!"

Ye Xiao was happy to hear it. "Really? Is he that good?"

Song Jue rolled up the eyes. He was a bit speechless now. "Of course Xiao Monarch is good! Not like you! Arrogant! Stupid! What's in your mind!"

Ye Xiao's face twitched and he said 'fxck'. He couldn't help it.

[Okay. Now what should I say?]

"Oh, there is another Ye Xiao in Qing-Yun Realm..." he murmured.

"Humph. Xiao Monarch ruled the world! He is smart, handsome, brave, strong and generous. He is invincible! You are never going to be a match to him!"

Song Jue looked admiring. "That year, Xiao Monarch traveled alone with one sword in the Qing-Yun Realm. He killed the evil guys and helped the nice people. He was arbitrary and he murdered a lot of lives, but he never did anything vile. He just killed those he had to kill.

"Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao. What a hero. He seemed both righteous and evil. People praised him and also scolded him. Even his enemies never criticized his personality."

Song Jue seemed thrilled talking about Xiao Monarch. However, at the end, he sighed. "It is a pity. Such a heroic figure died without leaving a body!"

"Ah? He is dead? Pah. Xiao Monarch is dead? Wasn't he such an invincible hero? How did he die?" Ye Xiao asked.

He knew exactly how he himself died. Song Jue shouldn't know, nor should Ye Nantian. They both had been away from Qing-Yun Realm for so many years. Why would they know Ye Xiao's death?

Song Jue held his breath and said, "People of Ye Clan in Qing-Yun Realm came down and we had a conversation. They mentioned how Xiao Monarch fell into a trap and was hunted by those factions. He died. Such a heroic figure died in vile schemes! What a shame!"

Ye Xiao asked, "Uncle Song, there was a famous man Ye Xiao, then why is my name Ye Xiao too? Does my father worship Xiao Monarch?"

Ye Xiao had this question in mind for a long time. Ye Nantian was from the Qing-Yun Realm. He surely knew about Xiao Monarch, the world-shocking figure in the Qing-Yun Realm. Why would he name his own son Ye Xiao? That was strange indeed.

...

Chapter 704: Lousy Idea!

Song Jue looked weird all of a sudden. He said, "I haven't figure out the reason about it either. I admire Xiao Monarch, a hundred and twenty percent. In fact, you father wasn't so sad about Xiao Monarch's death... When you were born, he wanted to name you Ye Xiao, not Xiao (笑), but Xiao (霄) as clouds. I don't know why it ended up the name you have now. Maybe he wants you to be a great man like Xiao Monarch, shocking the world, traveling the universe..."

Ye Xiao didn't dig on this question.

However, he still thought that there must be a reason for this. Ye Nantian knew there was a man named Ye Xiao, yet he still insisted to name his own son the same name. Ye Xiao believed he has a special reason for that!

Such thing was supposed to be abstained after all.

The attack of Kingdom of Lan-Feng ended in the shouts. This was the ninth attack in the day!

It ended temporarily, and it would come again!

Every attack was in full power like storms.

Ye Xiao got his men to take out the vat and started to boil water in the vats. He threw two dan beads into each vat.

The wounded men would drink a bowl of the water and then went to rest.

Ye Xiao was rich, but he couldn't spend more than this.

Those who weren't hurt but only tired only got to take turns to rest.

Only those who were injured badly had the chance to drink the water of dan. If everybody drank the water freely, Ye Xiao would use up every dan he had left.

In the other side.

Wenren Jianyin was looking at the Iron Peak. He was holding a binocle. He looked confused.

"They are being attacked so frequently, but... It doesn't feel right?" He frowned.

"It feels strange, but I can't tell what it is." A general with big beard was also confused.

Wenren Chuchu stood aside, wearing a suit of white clothes. She was quiet, lost in thoughts.

The fight had been ongoing for a long time. It was apparently wrong. It was strange. However, she couldn't figure out what went wrong exactly.

"Two hundred thousand men at once, we have stricken nine times. They should have all been exhausted even if they are all iron men. But... their soldiers on the wall... Why are they still so fierce and strong? They can't feel tired? This is impossible. It can't be true."

"We have been fighting the Kingdom of Chen for hundreds of years. Since when have we seen such an army in the Kingdom of Chen?" Wenren Jianyin frowned and said, "There must be something happening to them."

Wenren Chuchu frowned. She said, "Hmm. I am familiar with some men on their side. They definitely got damaged in the previous attacks. But... after two more waves of attacks, they climbed up on the wall again. I can't even see the wounds on them. They are even more vigorous after..."

"True! That's right!" A general held a binocle and nodded. "Their soldiers too. They got hurt but then came out like nothing ever happened.!"

Wenren Jianyin's face turned dark.

"I am afraid Feng Monarch has attended this war. That is real." Wenren Jianyin said, "I believe, only Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall has dan beads that can work like that! He may be using much better dan beads than we can imagine!"

"That's right. Only Feng Monarch can do this!" Wenren Chuchu looked gloomy. She said, "Wounded soldiers, as long as they are breathing, he can bring them back to full recovery, even strengthen them with his dan beads. Only he has that many dan beads to support their army!"

The other generals were all scared. "Does it mean... we are fighting an army that can never die? That... How do we win? Feng Monarch doesn't even show up in the battle. He just keeps giving dan beads to his soldiers and we will be dragged off!"

They looked at each other and couldn't say more.

[No matter how we damage their men, as long as they are still breathing, they will return to perfection after a short time. They can keep fighting against us without losing any energy.]

[Look how hard we are working on this to hurt them. After we are exhausted fighting them down, they rise again vigorously...]

[The only thing that will happen to us is that we get killed!]

[If this goes on unchanged, not to mention one million men, even ten million men will die out!]

[Reality is cruel. What should we do to deal with this?]

They couldn't think of anything practical at all!

"The only thing we can do is to send somebody to assassinate Feng Monarch in their place. It will solve all problems!"

One general made such a suggestion after being lost in thoughts for a long time.

Well. He was right. If they could get Feng Monarch killed like that, every problem would be solved!

However, as he finished his suggestion, all the others looked at him like looking at a fool.

[He must be crazy!]

[He is insane. Otherwise, how can he propose such a 'wonderful' suggestion?]

"What? Why looking at me like that?" The general was confused. [I think it is a good method!]

"You are really good! How can you come up with such a lousy idea?" Another general sneered, "Let's just ignore the fact that Feng Monarch has a strong intention of retaliation. Think about it. Those men who offered a huge money to put his head on reward. Billions! Yet they all died because Feng Zhiling paid a huge fortune to revenge! Assassins of the entire world went to kill for him..."

"Let's say it can be ignored. He is a recognized rival to Master Bai. Remember? Who can kill him? Two great sects wanted to kill him. Well. Where are they now? They were wiped out within one day. The mountains got swept out. And he even created a lake!"

"Tell me. Who do we send for this? Who can kill him? Or how many men do we send out for his life? A walking god's life?"

"Don't forget Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun! We don't even have one man who is as good as Ning Biluo on our side. You actually want to assassinate Feng Monarch? Are you out of your mind?"

...

Chapter 705: Enough!

"Do you know what we should fear the most? Feng Monarch are giving dan beads to heal the soldiers. He hasn't started to fight in the battle yet. If we piss him off and he rushes over, imagine, will our camp become another lake that he makes?"

Another general stared at the general who made the suggestion and spoke in anger, "I can assure you that this lake will drown us all. If we do it as you suggest, that is what ends up on us. That means... you, how smart, dig a huge hole but we are the ones die in it!"

"You will die too! You dig the hole and you die in it yourself. You better bury yourself too!" The other generals stared at the general who made the suggestion. They wished they could punch the wit out of him.

To stay with a fool like that was too dangerous...

He felt embarrassed, so his face turned red. He murmured, "I was just saying... I won't really do it... I am not a fool..."

"Shhh..." The others glanced at him.

[Not a fool? Really?]

[You sure?]

"Calm the fxck down, all of you. What are you yelling for. The priority is to think of a way to solve this situation. Isn't it? Do we need anybody to keep telling how horrible, how strong, and how significant Feng Monarch is?" Wenren Jianyin made a deep sigh.

Their commander was pissed. The generals didn't dare to say more. They looked like having astriction.

[This should be a fair battle between two kingdoms. How could we predict such a thing?]

[It should be a fair fight. As simple as that. But such a man just

showed up in our way like this, at this important moment.]

[I thought it was a terrible thing to face Ye Nantian's son and those assassins. Unexpectedly, that was not the biggest nightmare. We are actually fighting against the living legend in the world.]

[We can't kill him. We can't defeat him. We can't mess with him. We don't want to piss him. We just wait and see his soldiers coming back again and again after refreshing.]

[All they need to do is to stay alive. That will make them stay fully prepared and vigorous at all time. It only takes them a short time to recover from any wounds.]

[We can't stop them from resting. That's impossible.]

[We need to let our men rest no matter how many groups we divide them!]

[We don't have guys like Feng Monarch. We don't have those magical dan beads!]

[Different soldiers have different lives!]

Wounded soldiers were carried away from the battle. Many soldiers died under that wall...

Some soldiers were still breathing when the others were carrying them, but they eventually died beside their brothers because of the severe injury.

However, in the Kingdom of Chen's side, soldiers were cured no matter how bad they were hurt!

Kingdom of Lan-Feng kept losing their men, while Kingdom of Chen lost none!

"Sound the horn! Retreat!"

Wenren Jianyin confirmed it after a longer observation. [I saw some men get seriously injured, but then come out like nothing ever happened to them...]

[Lots of them!]

He sighed.

He knew that he couldn't go on this fight anymore. If he wanted to sacrifice his men, he should better have something to sacrifice for. It was meaningless now. He was just wasting his soldiers.

As the horns sounded, the army of Kingdom of Lan-Feng retreated like ebb tide.

Night had come.

The fight lasted for a whole day. If the Kingdom of Lan-Feng didn't notice what went on with the Kingdom of Chen's side, it would last much longer!

At the moment, it was silent both outside and inside the Iron Peak.

People moaned from time to time.

Medics were busy dealing with the damaged soldiers in the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

A white shadow flew out and disappeared in the darkness outside. It was moving to the tower.

Ye Xiao was making the vats of magical water.

Generals were waiting outside, standing in a row.

Everybody got a bucket in the hand. Big buckets. Bigger than their waists. They just wanted to get more of that water.

It was amazing.

No matter how bad one was hurt, one bowl of this water would bring them back to vigor.

Some slightly injured men just took some water and rested for a while, and then they were good for the fight!

That...

It was a miracle!

Who didn't want more!

"Stay back, general! I am here first!" A general was trying to get closer.

"Why don't you step back? Who saw you come earlier? Don't even try to lie!" Somebody was annoyed.

"Hmm... Come on. I got lots of wounded ones!"

"B*llshit! We have knocked off a million men today. We all have lots of wounded ones!"

"Damn it! I am being nice to you more than enough! Just get away and cut your sh*t!"

"Damn you! What? You want a fight? I would love to!"

"..."

Several generals fiercely stared at each other, like they would begin a fight at any second.

However, it wasn't a special case. They fought for the water all day.

Nobody would give in when it concerned the magic water!

Song Jue got in with dark face. He scolded them immediately, "Shut the fxck up, all of you! You pieces of shxt! God damn it! What is this? You actually want to start a fight against your own brother? What? All those filthy words come out of your mouth? You think you are tough? Fxck! Are you really so eager to die now?"

The generals just stood there listening to General Song who spoke with filthy words... They were embarrassed...

[And you are scolding us huh? You are the one who are being rude here!]

Song Jue shouted, "Heavens and hell! You bastards! How dare

you yell those words in front of me? For just a bit of that water? Enough is enough! Can't you show the manner of a man? Hold the demeanor, will you? Fxck this shxt! I have seen enough of you!"

The other generals were embarrassed!

[I guess you have said enough filthy words yourself. That is enough for us anyway.]

However, Song Jue was powerful and fierce. They all knew it. No matter what he said, they had to just listen.

At this moment, Ye Xiao got out. "It's done. Get ready for the water... Holy heavens and hell! Fxck!"

Commander Ye started the filthy words campaign too. He was angry. "You bastards! Can't you see how much water I made? You actually carried some huge vats over... What the hell you think you are doing?"

The generals giggled, "Please, forgive us, Commander! Too many brothers got hurt... Well... Urh..."

...

Chapter 706: Princess Came For Visit!

"Get off! All of you! Get off now!" Ye Xiao raged up with anger. "How many times did I tell you? One tea cup of this water will recover one good man! How many men do you think need this vat of water? Unbelievable! Un-f*ckin-believable! Go get some regular things back now! Unless you want me to kick you the hell out and stop giving you shxt! Go!"

Generals promised and then left right away.

They got away as soon as they heard Ye Xiao might not give them the water.

"These guys..." Ye Xiao felt annoyed. "I only have several vats of it. They actually brought their vats to take the water. That was impressing. I wonder how their heads all be filled with shxt like this..."

Song Jue laughed. "Everybody wants more... Humph!"

Suddenly, he frowned. Ye Xiao noticed something too. They both raised up their heads and looked to the sky.

They were looking at somewhere high.

Song Jue suddenly emitted murderous qi. "Bodacious!"

He jumped up and prepared to rush out.

"Wait!" A soft voice sounded, "I mean you no harm."

A white shadow appeared in the dark.

Wenren Chuchu!

"Princess Lan-Feng?" Song Jue was happy. "You can wear out iron shoes in fruitless search, and yet by a lucky chance you may find the lost thing without even looking for it. Since you come to us by yourself, don't blame us for being merciless. It is just perfect to catch you and warm my nephew's bed!"

Ye Xiao's forehead was cold with sweat.

He really didn't thought of doing that. Even if he did think of it, he wouldn't dare to make the girl do it.

He might get his p*nis cut off, as well as his... head...

"Commander Ye, I am here to talk." Wenren Chuchu looked at Ye Xiao's face and spoke in a soft voice, "Can we?"

Song Jue hurriedly gave Ye Xiao a hint by a blink. He didn't want Ye Xiao to stay with the girl alone. [She is dangerous! You are not her rival at the moment. Do not do anything stupid...]

Ye Xiao looked into Wenren Chuchu's eyes.

Wenren Chuchu looked back at him blandly.

There was a sense of softness and sorrow deep in her eyes.

Ye Xiao sighed and shook his head. "Uncle Song, please go give the guys this water and walk around the walls. I need to speak with her for a while."

"Urh?" Song Jue couldn't believe it.

"It's fine." Ye Xiao smiled. "We know each other."

Song Jue was shocked.

When Wenren Chuchu heard that, she nearly lost control of her tears. She gritted with her teeth and she started shaking.

Song Jue was capable. He had been observing her, so he knew something was wrong about her. He then smiled strangely and said, "Fine. I have other business to take care of anyway. Just be safe. We are at war. She is the enemy."

Then he left. When he was at the door, he murmured to himself, "Oh my nephew is good. A princess... He actually hooked up with a princess... Wow. I am admiring him now..."

Then he just disappeared.

The words 'hook up' made Wenren Chuchu blush. She wanted to

explain, but Song Jue had gone away. She didn't have anybody to explain to.

She felt embarrassed so she humphed and said, "You will get what you deserve!"

"Princess, please." Ye Xiao reached out his hand and smiled. "There is nowhere quiet enough though. Shall we go to my bedroom?"

That was a normal situation.

There wouldn't be any quiet place in the battlefield!

Even he was the commander, all he had was a tent, a bigger one. He slept and ate inside it.

However, what Ye Xiao said was kind of ambiguous.

Especially after Song Jue said 'hook up'. If he said 'my tent' or 'my office', it would be better. However, he said 'bedroom', although they all referred to the same place.

He did use 'bedroom'!

Wenren Chuchu blushed. She said, "Prick!"

However, one had to head down under other's eaves. She was here asking for a conversation. She knew he was being skittish, but she had to endure it!

When they got to Ye Xiao's 'bedroom', she was relieved.

It wasn't the 'bedroom' she imagined at all.

Most of the premises in Iron Peak were destructed because of the war. They turned them into guarding appliance. However, there were several rooms left. Ye Xiao could have lived in one, however, he gave them to the wounded men.

As long as one was cured, he should move out and leave the room for others. There used to be some badly injured men who had to occupy the room for a long time. Thanks to Ye Xiao's magic water,

the rooms were enough to hold all injured men!

What Ye Xiao did for the army begot great respect from the soldiers.

Certainly, a commander should at least have a tent.

His tent was spacious. There was a wood screen in the middle of the tent. The inner part was his bedroom, while the other was his office. It was simple but decent.

"Please." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Princess, what can I do for you? You came in the darkness of the night."

Wenren Chuchu gritted with her teeth as she stared at Ye Xiao. Her gaze became complicated. She said, "I have to confirm one thing. Should I call you Feng Monarch, or Commander Ye?"

Ye Xiao stayed calm. He laughed and casually spoke, "Princess, that is a funny question. You see, that is just a code that we all need to be living in this world. Birds fly over leaving shadows while men should leave fame after..."

"Stop!" Wenren Chuchu was speechless. She interrupted him from making a long speech. "Truth is right in front of my eyes. Don't ever deny it. I just cannot believe this. Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, who has long been famous in the history, turns out to be a foppish young lord, the useless son of Ye Nantian, the Great General Ye!"

...

Chapter 707: Disclaim!

She looked at Ye Xiao with coldness in her eyes. She slowly said, "Being reviled as a stupid young lord but doing nothing to stop it. However, secretly, you have built an enormous empire of yourself that shocked the entire world. Nobody truly recognized your true identity and your capability... It is not so difficult to imagine though. Son of the great Ye Nantian, how could you be a complete retard? However, I have to say, Ye Xiao, you are hiding so deep."

Ye Xiao laughed. "That is not all. I am a dan-maker, a physician too. You always need to hide some ace cards. Showing everything you have to the world is to expose yourself to the death."

When he said 'physician', Wenren Chuchu blushed. It reminded her the day when her clothes was taken off and he touched her so as to cure her.

She still felt like there was a big warm hand touching her soft belly...

Her mind was wandering and she completely ignored the rest of Ye Xiao's 'ace card' theory.

"Physician... Humph!" She returned to her senses and smartly skipped this ambiguous topic. "Who would know that Feng Monarch with an ordinary face is actually like this. How unexpected."

Ye Xiao raised the eyebrows and said, "What about it? Am I not handsome?"

Wenren Chuchu was annoyed. "Handsome your ass!"

He had seen her naked, and she didn't know who he really was until this moment. He asked her if he was handsome. She must be wonderful in self-restraint. Otherwise, she would have swayed her sword to him!

Ye Xiao laughed loudly. He didn't take it as offense.

Wenren Chuchu felt more troubled. Finally, she made sure that he was Feng Monarch, the man she had known for a long time. He looked completely different at the moment, but he was Feng Zhiling for sure!

However, she felt weak.

"It is you! It has always been you!" She sighed.

"Sure." Ye Xiao smiled. "I guess it doesn't surprise you that much."

Wenren Chuchu nodded with a muddy mind in head.

It didn't surprise her.

She knew Feng Zhiling was showing a fake face all the time. She knew that he would show his real face someday. He even changed his body, but it wasn't such a surprising thing for her, as she was a cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm. It might be unbelievable for people in Land of Han-Yang though.

After a while, she finally calmed down. She looked strong and steady again.

"I mean. You are doing so well in Ling-Bao Hall. Why join the war?" Wenren Chuchu couldn't understand it. "Don't you know you are already a figure beyond all kingdoms in the world? Ling-Bao Hall is an independent force. Why come to this place? Why get into the trouble that you don't need to?"

She truly couldn't think it through.

Apparently, for her, Feng Zhiling, well, Ye Xiao now, was in an even higher position than herself. She was a princess in the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, and she was in a super sect in Qing-Yun Realm. However, because she thought so highly of him, she couldn't understand why Ye Xiao would do this.

"Different people stand different positions, have different views and different responsibilities." Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, "The world

is in a mess. What we should do now is to end the disturbance and return a peaceful world for the people!"

Wenren Chuchu sneered at him. "What a great dream. What? You want to be a hero? Do you even believe what you just said yourself?"

"It doesn't matter if I believe it or not. Nor you. What matters is that I am here now." Ye Xiao spoke with great countenance, "For the peaceful world, for the lives of the people, I will do whatever I can to bring happiness back to the world."

"You!" Wenren Chuchu was annoyed.

He talked useless things and didn't give her any of the response she wanted. However, that was fine. The problem was that she felt weak facing this man.

She couldn't rage up with anger. She was filled with weakness. [He saved my life twice!]

[After he saved me and fell into a despairing situation, I left...]

Now they met again. Her heart was full of complicated emotions. There was something sticking right in her heart. The guilt. It became heavier and heavier in her heart!

"I guess you are close to breaking through the bound of this world." She looked at him and said, "I guess all that you need is an opportunity. One particular moment and you will rush up to Qing-Yun Realm. I know it. You know it..."

"That means you are leaving this world. Is that why you want to do something for this world? Or do you want to leave your fame in this place?" She looked at Ye Xiao with confusion, "However, I don't think you should create your own legend in the battlefield. Am I right..."

Ye Xiao spoke with righteousness, "Why shouldn't I? I am a cultivator. Shouldn't I devote myself to the world, to the people, to my country?"

"..." Wenren Chuchu was speechless now.

[Are you insane? Can't you just talk like a mentally healthy man?]

[Unbelievable!]

Ye Xiao was helpless though. [You are right. But I can't tell you the truth! The truth is... my biggest secret... My ace card...]

[I will never tell you a damn thing.]

"The war here has been in such circumstances. It should be ended earlier. Because of you, it took more time. Do you really want to interfere more in this thing?" Wenren Chuchu asked, "There is not much time left for you. Isn't it?"

Ye Xiao was solemn. "That's right. Look what it is now. Do you still want to go on with it? My interfering defines the finality, doesn't it?"

"It seems you and your men doesn't have much time left either?" He looked at her, smiling blandly.

He was almost repeating what she just said.

However, there was a difference. She knew it.

Wenren Chuchu was talking about him!

However, Ye Xiao was talking about her and the men on her side!

...

Chapter 708: We Won't See It!

That was completely different.

[He knows that I don't have much time left. He knows that our million troops don't have much time left!]

[His interfering did decide the result of the war!]

[His side is winning!]

"You don't believe it? As long as I am here, Iron Peak is an iron shield!" Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "No matter how many men you have, one million or ten million, you can't break Iron Peak as long as I am holding it. You know that."

Wenren Chuchu humphed, "Maybe! You are on your own after all. The reason why you can still hold it is you. You keep supplying the dan beads. We have over a dozen times more men than you are. How many dan beads can you make for them? Even if you do have enough dan beads to consume, would you really use them up?"

"Your personal strength is what our men fear for. And you are not that invincible like they said. The rumor describes you as a god. But I know what you are! You are not that strong. I am sure it is somebody else who destroyed the two sects within one day. It can't be you. Even Song Jue couldn't do that. Not to mention you."

Ye Xiao smiled, "You are lying to yourself. Different people have different views about my personal strength. But what they said about my power, that is true! As long as I want to, I can use most of the forces in the martial world by one order!"

He stared at Wenren Chuchu with sharp eyes, "I can use that! Those men are all tough men who can kill among millions of enemies... You don't have such power. You can't defend yourself."

Wenren Chuchu was quiet.

She couldn't deny it.

Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall did have the power!

As long as he made an order, and offer something like supreme dan beads as a reward, the entire martial world would boil for him!

The fever it could come with scared Wenren Chuchu!

Kingdom of Lan-Feng definitely didn't have such power.

She doubted that the dan beads he had used on the soldiers these days could already drive countless men in martial world to fight for him!

"So, if you push it too hard, say if you destroy the wall of Iron Peak, I may go mad. That is reasonable." Ye Xiao spoke blandly.

He sounded peaceful, but in fact his words were full of threats!

Wenren Chuchu humphed and said, "You can get the men in martial world to work for you. So what? Kingdom of Chen is going to the end. We still have the chance to defeat you."

She actually admitted defeat by saying so.

She regretted right after saying it.

However, it was spilt milk.

Ye Xiao smiled, "Look. I came here and it is done. We will win. I just need to stay here for half a month and my father's northern army will arrive at Iron Peak."

"Do you think you can break Iron Peak within half a month?" Ye Xiao smiled, "Break Iron Peak that was defended by me!"

Wenren Chuchu's face turned pale.

[Can we? In half a month?]

[Nobody knows. But I am sure about one thing. We are losing. Even if we can break Iron Peak, it will cost us four hundred thousand men!]

That was a huge number of loss!

Even Wenren Jianyin, Kingdom of Lan-Feng couldn't take it!

"Let's say even if you break through Iron Peak. So what? It is not Chen-Xing City behind Iron Peak! Maybe it is the iron fists of the Northern Army!"

Ye Xiao was eased. He said, "It seemed we are losing it so far. However, your men are all tired. I can assure you, even if you can break through, you will have no more than nine hundred thousand men left. Northern Army will only do a rushing to defeat you!"

"Even though they have you to support them, so what? Do you think you can stop my father?" Ye Xiao kept pushing. "Maybe you don't know much about my father. He is in Dream Origin Stage. As long as you make attacks, my father will return a strike for sure. Who loses the fight who dies in the battle. You know what that means to you?"

Wenren Chuchu gritted with her teeth. "Speed is too important in war! Northern Army is dozens of thousand miles away. As long as we..."

"That is only what you want to believe..." Ye Xiao reached out a finger, long and pale, waved in front of her, "You are not the only one who know the importance of speed. My father is War God of Chen. He knows it well. Northern Army has sent their men over when they knew I was coming here. Not a lot. They just sent about sixty thousand men. Well... it has been seven days since they left for here! That means they are no further than eight thousand miles from us now! Ten day! That is all they need to get here!"

"There are more coming after them."

He continued, "You know what it means."

Wenren Chuchu took a long breath. She spoke blandly, "How do I know you are bragging or not? You think you can scare me?"

"Well. There is no need to argue. Truth speaks for me." Ye Xiao was casual. He wasn't nervous at all. He said, "You can just wait

and see. Let's see who is the one still laughs after!"

Her eyes became sharp and she said blandly, "Sure!"

Of course he was trying to scare him. He didn't know where Northern Army was. Sixty thousand men? He made it up to fool her.

However, that was only thing he could do now.

Would Wenren Chuchu be scared? He didn't care that much.

"Look. What I said, I said it for the position I stand for. It annoys us both. I apologize. Princess, what do you want? You are not coming for a quarrel, are you?" Ye Xiao half closed his eyes.

"Of course not." Wernen Chuchu sighed and said, "Feng Monarch, hmm, no, Lord Ye, I believe you know something. No matter which side wins this war, no matter who conquers the world, you and me, we are not going to witness it."

Ye Xiao was quiet.

She was right. It was the truth.

Maybe he could still witness the victory in this battlefield. However, he would never see who got the world at the end.

He should be in Qing-Yun Realm by then.

...

Chapter 709: Deal!

"We are not going to see the victory in this mortal world anyway." Wenren Chuchu looked worried and sad. "We know what we are trying to do... but... you have to admit. All things here are not our business anymore."

"We want to do something. We want to take the ones we love with us... However, that is only a hope, a dream, something we can never get done." She was grieving.

Ye Xiao stayed silent and then said, "That's right. I feel the same."

"Things aren't going to just go as you wish in life." He stood up and spoke with profound gaze, "From the moment one is born to the end of his life, many things have to be abandoned... Some people have been with us since we were kids. When we grow up and go ahead to our goals step by step, we are getting further and further from these people."

"Maybe when we looked around, they are already gone. However, they represent the period of your most valuable time... They are the closest friends you have. You don't want to lose them, you want to go back to them, but you will have to give up everything you have worked so hard for. You decide to go ahead alone. You are bound to be lonely. We never like to be alone. That is why we seek for friends on the way to our dream. They become our friends and they may accompany us till the end of our lives..."

"What is ironic is that... when you reach a certain point, sadly, you will find that the people around you are all strangers..."

"Those who accompany you to the end are all strangers."

"We can't take the ones we love with us. Because we aren't able to." He sighed. "So, we should just give up whatever we should. It seems cruel, but we have to do it. We can't give up on the great future for mediocrity. We give up things so that we get new ones."

Wenren Chuchu sighed. "Right."

"You and I, we are in opposite sides this battle. However, we have the same amount of time left. We both will miss the result," she said.

"That is why I want to know why are you here?" Ye Xiao said.

"Well in fact, I want to make a deal with you." Wenren Chuchu took a deep breath. She smiled. "I believe you would love to make this deal with me."

"Deal?" Ye Xiao frowned. He looked at her and said, "What are you giving to me, Princess?"

It should be a normal question, yet because of the way he spoke it, it sounded a bit evil somehow.

It felt like... he was asking for the girl's pretty body.

Wenren Chuchu blushed and shouted, "Can you just talk like a grown-up man?"

"What do you mean like a grown-up man? I should talk this way, don't you think?" Ye Xiao said, "Don't you remember that I am Lord Xiao of Chen, head of the three foppish lords in town? As a foppish immoral young lord, I should definitely talk in this way. Otherwise, it will ruin my title!"

Wenren Chuchu started to feel headache.

[This is helpless. How can he keep talking nonsense. He is even worse in his real appearance.]

She really wanted to ask him this. 'Your stupid title makes you the law here? Head of the stupid lords, huh? Is that really a good title for you?'

"Brother Ye, if you keep doing this, I will have to leave," she coldly spoke.

"Fine." Ye Xiao immediately changed. Suddenly, he became a solemn commander of an army. "Your highness, please tell me

want you want. Time flies. There is not much time to waste."

She was impressed by how fast he actually changed himself into the current status. She sighed.

[He is so... I don't know whether he is telling the truth or not. I don't know why, but it feels comfortable that he is acting so seriously now...]

Her heart was beating heavily and she nearly lost control of it.

There was a special and strange emotion filling in her heart. She was terrified but also happy... How complicated.

She wanted to stay there doing nothing, but also wanted leave immediately.

"It is simple for you and me, this deal." She gasped and said, "Look... Since you and me, neither of us can see the result to this war, and we both have people we care a lot in this world... why don't we make a deal."

Ye Xiao stared at him. "Oh? What deal should we make?"

"I have somebody I care about here. Even though I have to leave the world forever, they will always be the ones I care the most... It is my responsibility that I can never let down." Wenren Chuchu's eyes look gloomy. She said, "I want them to live safely. I want them to live happy lives..."

"I want them... to live without pain and tear..."

"They are my father, my mother, and my..." She sighed and slowly spoke.

She spoke several names, and she sounded full of emotion. "I know I will never meet them again in the future... I don't know... Maybe I will suddenly die someday in the Qing-Yun Realm. I hope before I leave them, or before I die, I can do more for them. I want to make arrangement on everything I can. I want to do what a daughter should do for them.

"The deal I want you to make is... If Kingdom of Chen wins this war, you will keep these people alive.

"That is what I want from you."

She didn't wait for Ye Xiao's response. She continued, "And I can make the same promise for you. I will protect the ones you care about, who can't leave with you... If the Kingdom of Lan-Feng wins, I will keep them safe!"

"You promise, and I promise too."

She looked up and stared at Ye Xiao. "We will both leave this world, but we both have enough power to protect some people in the world!

"I believe we can!"

"That is what I want. A deal! A deal that benefits both you and me!"

She spoke with eagerness.

As a daughter, what she asked for was to take care of her parents. She knew she would leave her parents, so she just wanted to do more for them. She wanted to do whatever she could before it was too late... She wanted to do something before her parents died, also before she died...

It was hard to explain.

"A deal..." Ye Xiao spoke and then closed his eyes.

Apparently, Wenren Chuchu had people she loved in the world. He did too!

Zuo Wuji, Lan Langlang, Prince Hua-Yang, Princess Hua-Yang—they were all his cared for!

Once he left, what would their lives be?

...

Chapter 710: Important People!

Nobody knew how things would develop in the future.

The result of this battle would only be revealed at the end, and nobody could foresee it.

One thing was sure though. Even though Ye Xiao could bring victory to the Kingdom of Chen in this battle, he wouldn't know which kingdom would eventually win the war and conquer the world!

[When I leave, father, Uncle Song, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian would all come with me. Could the Kingdom of Chen rule the world without my father?]

[It can't be sure!]

[As long as the Kingdom of Chen was fine, people he cared for would be fine. What if the Kingdom of Chen was destroyed? It was a possible thing in the future!]

[It seems this is a good deal to make?]

"Okay." Ye Xiao made the decision. "I promise!"

Wenren Chuchu's eyes lit up. She said, "Deal?"

"Deal!" Ye Xiao nodded.

They looked at each other and both of them felt relieved. They both had put down the burden in their hearts.

Just like Wenren Chuchu said, it was quite easy for them to keep some people safe in the world.

She was the princess of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. That was an important position. Ye Xiao was not bad. As Ye Xiao or Feng Zhiling, he could totally keep some people alive!

Even though they were people of the opposing kingdoms, it wouldn't be a problem. He could just make the promise as he

wished.

"Thanks." Wenren Chuchu was sincerely grateful and full of emotion.

"One question. I want to know, if it weren't me, where would you go to make the deal with?" Ye Xiao asked, "There should be some other figures you can talk to, right?"

Wenren Chuchu was blank.

"No."

She answered, "I saw you, then I came up with this idea... I wouldn't talk to others. I simply don't trust others."

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[So you don't trust other, but you trust me like this?]

[Why?]

[We are in opposite kingdoms. How can you be so sure about this?]

"Let's just keep the promises. I can finally put down the burden in my mind. One can think of dreams and lives as long as one survives." Wenren Chuchu said, "I have bothered you for such a long time. My apologies, Commander Ye. I won't stay any longer. I shouldn't waste more of your time."

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "So you are leaving now?"

Wenren Chuchu humphed, "Are you, Commander, going to keep me, a young girl stay?"

‘Commander’, ‘young girl’, that meant something!

Ye Xiao laughed. "I thought you came to me to discuss about when you will retreat. Look how it disappointed me. I must have overestimated myself."

Wenren Chuchu was shocked. She didn't have time to reply, yet Ye Xiao said, "Don't you think there has already been too many

people who died? You come for me, to do what you can to keep the men you love safe, leaving them the opportunity to live. Why can't you just do more for your people?"

Wenren Chuchu sighed and said, "It is never my decision to make!"

"You too. Can you really make the decision? I know you have given the army lots of money as Feng Monarch. You attend this war because you don't want the Kingdom of Chen fall. You don't want innocent people die, however, we are not omnipotent. There are some things we can't do. Look. Do not have that idea, I am telling you."

"A lot people died, huh? Look, listen, there are a lot!" She looked gloomy and she sighed. "But you know what? For thousands of years, how many people died in the battle every year?"

That was true. People died in the battle for thousands of years.

That was a lot. That was countless.

Ten million men died this year. Think about thousands of years...

There should be over thousands of billions of men who died in the war!

They all have purposes. They stood for different positions. They all had faith. However, they all eventually lost their lives.

Like Wenren Chuchu said, there were always things they couldn't do, no matter how powerful they were. Sometimes, they could do something, but the evilness of human beings stopped them!

What they did next was to make a list to each other, with names on it.

Wenren Chuchu put on the names of her father, her mother, her uncle and her brothers and sisters...

When Wenren Chuchu saw Ye Xiao's list, she was stunned.

She looked at Ye Xiao with complicated countenance.

Names she gave included all her own kins. She didn't put on many names. More people to protect, more difficult to protect after all. Only her father, mother and her brothers and sisters, even half-blooded ones could not get on the list!

On Ye Xiao's list, there were much more names. Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang were surely in. Wenren Chuchu didn't even hear about most of the others.

She had a wonderful intelligence system. If she didn't hear about some of the names, those must be the least important ones, but they were on the list.

"Commander Ye, who are these people, if you don't mind me asking? This is a big number. To protect more people in the enemy kingdom, the more difficult it will be!" She pointed at those names and said, "Are they close to you?"

"Relax. I won't make it too difficult for you. They are all my father's men. Most of them are disabled... It won't be a difficult thing for you to protect them, princess. For your country, these men are the least important ones. They play the inessential roles in the war... No matter what, I don't want these men to die in the war."

"I put their names on this list because I hope that when they unluckily need to be protected, you can offer what they want. They have sacrificed too much... I don't want their lives to end in misery. That would be too cruel for them."

He spoke in a deep voice, "I haven't finished the list yet. I can't remember them all. I will add more names on it and no matter what happens, I will give you the completed one."

"I will keep my word, and I hope you will keep yours."

...

Chapter 711: Ashamed!

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed with an icy glow. "I think you know what I will do if you violate our agreement. You know me. The worst situation is that we give up protecting anybody. It won't be that difficult to let those men die. Not for me, at least. Right?"

Wenren Chuchu was emotional at the moment. She didn't really put that in mind, even though it was obviously a threat.

She looked at Ye Xiao and spoke in a low voice, "You are an honorable man."

Those she wanted to protect were all her own kin, who were all close to her. The people Ye Xiao wanted to protect were all not related to him at all, even though some might say they were brothers to him.

As they compared to each other, she was the more selfish one. That was obvious.

"I am a man!" Ye Xiao said.

"Yes," Wenren Chuchu said, "you are a real man."

She stood up and said, "Brother Ye, I will keep my promise. Don't worry!"

Ye Xiao said, "I am a man. A real man. A man should always keep his words. You know I do!"

She smiled. "I was not sure about it, but now I know you will!"

She then didn't stay any longer as she jumped out and left.

"You and me, let's meet in the Qing-Yun Realm. Commander Ye, take care. Don't forget the deal between us. And remember the Regeneration Ink Lotus..."

Her voice faded away.

Ye Xiao sighed. What he had worried the most before he could

leave was just solved in such a trivial manner. He had been worrying about those disabled men who had been following his father for so many years. He didn't know what to do for them after his father, Song Jue and he left this world!

The healthy ones were not to be worried about. They could earn their own good livings after all.

The problem laid on those who had contributed a lot but ended up disabled. Their lives would end with miseries.

He had thought about assigning them under Ling-Bao Hall's leadership. It was practical, but the men themselves wouldn't want it. They could be guards or servants in the House of Ye, but not in other places! It would be a disgrace!

Now that he had made such a deal with Wenren Chuchu, he could be relieved.

However, he couldn't help thinking about the conversation earlier. She said, 'You are a real man!' Well that... that was a bit... ambiguous...

[I am a real man?]

[Hahaha... how do you know such a private thing of me?]

He was lost in carnal thoughts immediately...

If Wenren Chuchu got to see the face of him now, she would definitely beat the hell out of him hard again, knowing he was such an ignoble man!

Why was it again? Because that was what she had done to him back to the old days!

That was his most painful memory!

"The girl left?" Song Jue entered the tent.

He guessed Wenren Chuchu was incredible in martial arts, so he didn't really go far. He kept hanging around nearby to observe the tent. When he saw Wenren Chuchu left, he returned and made

sure everything was fine.

He thought that Ye Xiao might not be able to defeat Wenren Chuchu. Surely, he couldn't defeat her. She was an heir of the Misty Cloud Palace after all.

She had been using some special method to hide her true capability. Even Song Jue couldn't clearly see through her, even though he was in a higher level.

"She's gone," Ye Xiao said.

"Gone?" Song Jue looked at Ye Xiao. "What did she want?"

"She came to have some private talk with me. Nothing important." Ye Xiao said, "Just preparation and arrangements. Nothing about this war."

Then he told Song Jue everything.

Song Jue was surprised. "That's all?"

Ye Xiao said, "That's it."

"She came so late at night just to talk about that?" Song Jue couldn't believe it. "She came to the enemy's place? At night? To see you? And talk about that?"

Ye Xiao frowned. "Is it not trifle, is it? Those are the people she cares the most. Her parents and her brothers and sisters. That is more than important to her..."

Song Jue sneered. "Even though it is that important to her, why can't she just pick another time? Or another place? Did she have to come to your room late at night? That was a huge risk! She took the risk for all those sh*t?"

Ye Xiao couldn't understand it. "Then why did she come? I would love to hear your opinion!"

"I thought you are smart, yet you turn out to be a fool. She came to you so late at night, because she wanted to see you!" Song Jue looked at him disappointedly. "You fool! Fool!"

"To see me?" Ye Xiao was confused. "Why? What do you mean?"

"To see your pretty face! F*ck!" Song Jue said with anger, "God damn it! You are usually a clever kid. Why are you acting like a f*cking moron now? You actually know nothing about girls? You have been with many girls! One on your left, the other on your right! How can you not see that?"

Ye Xiao felt wronged.

[What do you mean I have been with many girls? What do you mean one left one right!]

[I have lived two lives...]

[And I only experienced one girl... And she was my maid... And she started it on me...]

[I was cultivating Pure Yang Martial Arts. How did I know about girls?]

[You must be kidding...]

Song Jue humphed, "And you call yourself a foppish young lord... You're humiliating those foppish lords! You dishonored the 'three lords in town'!"

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[I am living my second life here and I can't even be a qualified foppish young lord... And can't you stop talking about 'three lords in town' now...]

"Is it true that the stupider you are, the more girls like you! Unbelievable..." Song Jue waved his head and kept his hands behind. He walked out and murmured, "Princess Yue-Er, the mysterious girl Bing-Er, now the princess of the enemy... Heavens... What a lucky bastard..."

He left and kept sighing.

...

Chapter 712: Fire Attack!

Ye Xiao was blank. He stayed in the tent for a long time.

[Is it true? That she just wanted to see me? The deal was just an excuse?]

[Urh...]

[This is... somehow... well... unbelievable?]

...

The next day, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng didn't make the attack again. However, their men kept moving and moving. They were all cutting woods...

Trees and even bushes... They kept gathering woods from everywhere, mountains and forests.

It was baffling at the beginning, yet they finally figured out what Wenren Jianyin was planning.

He was planning on the dumbest way to attack.

Fire attack!

All they were doing was to gather as many woods as they could and pile them behind the wall of Iron Peak.

They didn't need to care about how the wind blew, or how many woods they had. They just lit up the fire under the wall and the Iron Peak would be half broken.

During the time it burned, they would send their men to keep the superior cultivators of the Kingdom of Chen from putting out the fire.

When the fire was fully raised, it was done.

Fire had no mercy.

No matter how powerful a person is, as long as they live under the sky, they can't outdone the power of the nature. The huge fire

would leave them nowhere to hide... Nobody could endure the burning.

As long as the fire was on, Iron Peak would be broken soon after.

That was a cruel plan. It would completely destroy the tower. Lots of men would die, and lots of natural resources would die out too.

As long as the fire was on, the mountains on the two sides would be burned out.

After that, those who depended their livings on the mountains would also die.

Wenren Jianyin had never thought that he would do such a vile thing in his life. However, he had to do it, as he was losing the battle. He had to be vicious.

"Chuchu, what I am doing is violating the nature..." He sighed.

Wenren Chuchu sighed too.

She didn't sigh for the nature, she sighed because she knew her uncle might fail even though he had already decided to do such a vicious thing.

Other men might surrender to such a vicious attack.

However, Commander Ye was different.

He would at least keep the fire away from the Iron Peak.

"Please do reconsider this." Wenren Chuchu politely suggested, "This fire, it is a double-edged sword. If it doesn't bring us good..."

Wenren Jianyin nodded. "I know what you mean. If this fails, it will be a heavy strike back on us."

Wenren Chuchu said, "That is why I think we should reconsider it. It may be vile and strong for normal army, it may be too unnatural and immoral for ordinary men..."

"But for the army we are fighting... I am not sure what it will end

up with. After all, it is Feng Monarch holding the army. He is a legend in the world. You can't imagine what he will do. We can't take risk on that."

She said, "If he just defends, that will be fine. We will just waste some manpower and time. But, if he uses what we started to deal with us... now you know our men are all regular people. Once we got caught by fire, it is never going to be easy..."

Wenren Jianyin paced around and took in a deep breath.

He looked to his generals.

The generals all lowered their heads with a gloomy face. Nobody talked.

"What is the odds that the fire will be used back on us, according to what it shows now?" Wenren Jianyin asked.

"If the wind becomes north-east wind from south-west, as the fire rides the wind, we will one hundred percent be attacked by it! Even if the wind only becomes north wind or east wind, that will still be a eighty percent! If it keeps blowing from north-west, it will be less than thirty percent!"

Wenren Chuchu interrupted, "Uncle, don't forget the massive blast that can be made by lots of superior cultivators. The number of superior cultivators has always been their biggest advantage."

Wenren Jianyin paced a few steps and spoke in a deep voice, "That means as long as the wind stays in the same direction, we will very likely be fine. Even if the fire doesn't hurt them much, we will still be safe?"

Wenren Chuchu was worried. "Thirty percent is dangerous enough."

"Chuchu, thirty percent must be the worst situation in your mind. To me, it is less than ten percent."

Wenren Jianyin said, "They have much more superior cultivators

than we do. That is true. However, all cultivators are human beings. They may want to make a huge energy wave to turn the fire back to us. They have enough men to do it. However, they have a huge problem. They have to stand right facing the fire when they are going to make the blast together. We get ten mountains of woods ready... Even gold will be melted under it! Let alone human flesh? I don't believe those cultivators will all die for Kingdom of Chen. One or two maybe, but not all!"

Wenren Chuchu could only sigh.

She realized her uncle was decisive on this. He just wanted to give a final shot for it. No matter what she said, he wouldn't listen.

She felt the wind. It was blowing towards Iron Peak like shooting!

The weather was good, the temperature was constant, and so was the wind direction. It seemed impossible that the wind would change direction.

[No wonder Uncle is so confident.]

[Even if their superior cultivators work together, they can't change the wind direction.]

"Chuchu, I know you want the lowest risk for us. But we don't have much time." Wenren Jianyin sighed. "The latest report said Ye Nantian and his Northern Army are getting out from the grassland. One hundred thousand of them are coming this way!"

"If Ye Nantian's men arrive and we still haven't broken the wall, we lose the battle. The only opportunity during thousands of years to invade and occupy the territory of the Kingdom of Chen is right in my hands! I can't let it slip away!"

...

Chapter 713: Battle Out!

"If I lose this opportunity, the Kingdom of Chen will definitely grow stronger and stronger. And at the end, they will conquer us! Why would we declare war against the Kingdom of Chen as a union with other forces? The Kingdom of Chen is way much stronger than us in the world! The strongest!

"We have always been living in the threat of being invaded. That is why we took a move in advance to destroy it first.

"If we don't win this war, the world will belong to the Kingdom of Chen! And we will never be able to change it again!

"We have to break Iron Peak as fast as we can. Half a month... No. Within twenty days, we have to take Chen-Xing City and capture Chen Xuantian alive! That will draw an end to the Kingdom of Chen.

"In fact, twenty days is still not safe. If Ye Nantian and his Northern Army get on our way to Chen-Xing City after we break Iron Peak, we will still fail!

"We will have to retreat!

"Once we head back..." He showed a gloomy face. "We would have spent everything for this war. If we return without any gain... Chuchu, think about it..."

"How can I raise my head in front of our people back in our kingdom? I will have to end my life for it..."

"I would rather die fighting in the battle. Even if I lose it and die in this battle, I won't need to endure the disgrace."

Wenren Chuchu was speechless about it.

Wenren Jianyin was telling the truth.

It was the unchangeable truth.

He wanted a war. They supported him! He wanted money for

war, they gave him every bit in the treasury. Now he spent it all and finally got so close to the capital of the Kingdom of Chen. If he retreated now...

How could he bear the shame?

If the enemy was truly that strong and they hadn't gone far in it, it was fine. However, he was already sticking into the central region of the enemy's. How could he retreat now? And explain that the enemy was too strong?

That was worse than being defeated and kicked back.

As a famous general in the world, how could he endure such shame?

The fire attack was his best choice at the moment. As Wenren Chuchu thought deeper about it, she found that Wenren Jianyin's plan had a possibility to bring them a great victory!

If there was anything he missed in the plan, it was his estimation about Ye Xiao. He was helpless on that though. Even in the Kingdom of Chen, nobody really knew about Ye Xiao's true capability, not to mention Wenren Jianyin, who was from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng!

Wenren Chuchu knew a lot about Ye Xiao, yet it was not enough. She knew what Ye Xiao meant to the assassins of Ling-Bao Hall, and she knew how the assassins would die following his order! She knew it!

But that was far from enough!

"Case closed! Two days later, we burn the hell out of them!" Wenren Jianyin made up his mind. "We do it by layers. Three hundred miles of fire in several layers. Cut off all woods on the mountains. Make sure nothing influences the wind direction. Pour as much kerosene as you can on the woods. Throw all your tents into the fire. I want anything that can raise the fire into it!"

"This is the fight!"

"We do it one time and we take the Kingdom of Chen once and for all! If we fail, we die! We win or we die!" He took in a deep breath. There was fever in his eyes.

He seemed like a mad man.

Wenren Chuchu sighed. This was a fight that would absolutely get going. She wouldn't say anything useless now.

Wenren Jianyin's plan would drive Ye Xiao to an extreme position. He would have to defend in full effort. However, Ye Xiao's two hundred thousand good men, lots of superior cultivators and his supreme dan beads had already driven Wenren Jianyin into an extreme position!

If he didn't use the supreme dan beads, Wenren Jianyin should have conquered Iron Peak long ago!

He could have taken it down by sacrificing ten times more men to kill Ye Xiao's men!

Wipe them all out!

However, even if Wenren Jianyin was willing to sacrifice fifty men for every one of Ye Xiao's men, he wouldn't make it, because of the dan beads! That would be sacrificing for nothing!

No matter how badly he got Ye Xiao's men wounded, as long as they were still breathing, they would be brought back from death!

It was so cruel to Wenren Jianyin!

Not only had he seen it happen, almost all the generals had seen how Ye Xiao's men returned to the battle.

[I chopped him up to death last time! How come he just showed again and looked like nothing ever happened to him! I thought I must have seen wrong. Maybe they were two different men who looked like each other. Then I chopped him into half death again. However, the third time, he popped up in front of me again! I am sure I saw him! Vigorous like a tiger!]

[I can't deny what I saw with my own eyes!]

[Are they f*cking immortal?]

Many guys of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng experienced the same thing.

After all, there were limited amount of people guarding the wall. There were only three groups of men guarding the gates in turns. As the fight went on, people got to see them back from death...

How could Wenren Jianyin's men remain faithful facing immortal enemies?

They were truly tough enough not to freak out.

If Wenren Jianyin waited a few more days, his men would definitely panic. His army would collapse in disorder because of fear. He couldn't forbid his men talking, could he?

Wenren Jianyin's army had collected more and more woods. They had no places to pile them already. He gave an order and soldiers started to move the woods to the front line. All woods stopped three hundred meters from the wall.

One after another, they piled up the woods. Hundreds of thousands men were fully armed beside the woods. One hundred thousand archers were covering them with bows in hands.

As the woods piled up higher and higher, soldiers stepped on it and threw the woods ahead. The troops were holding shields marching ahead slowly.

That was how they pushed ahead and piled the woods to the foot of the wall.

If they lit up the fire on the woods and burned the Iron Peak, people inside would be burned to death by such a big mass of fire.

...

Chapter 714: I Get It!

I Get It!

Soldiers apparently knew what their commander was going to do. Woods were piled in three sides of the Iron Peak. Many of the soldiers knew that they were fighting against the enemies that wouldn't die in wounds. Fire attack was the best option to put their enemies down without sacrificing anything. That was why they worked like precise instruments on this.

If soldiers of the Kingdom of Chen didn't want to be roasted in the tower, they should better get out for a fight directly.

However, they had only over one hundred thousand men. It was like a mantis trying to stop a chariot if they went out for the fight! That was simply suicide!

They should try everything they could to stop Wenren Jianyin's plan, but it wasn't easy. Both sides were working their best in this. If they sent the superior cultivators to stop it, they had to send many of them, otherwise, it wouldn't work. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng would lit up the fire at any moment.

They would sacrifice the thousands of men in the front under the attacks of the superior cultivators to burn the superior cultivators to death. And after that, it would be much easier for them to break the Iron Peak. If nobody came out, they would keep piling the woods around the wall.

In one and a half days, there would be enough woods for them to burn the entire place out.

Hundreds of thousands of people worked together and this was what they could achieve.

After a while, people on the walls of Iron Peak started to panic.

Apparently, they finally realized what was really going on, but there was little they could do.

"What should we do?" Song Jue looked at Ye Xiao, who stood there with his hands behind the back.

"What's wrong with you? We wait and see what happens next," Ye Xiao blandly spoke while staring at the enemies' camp with sharp eyes.

"We see what happens next... And then what? We are running out of time here." Song Jue looked nervous.

"So? Do you think we can outrun the time if we move now? And what do you think we can do now?" Ye Xiao looked at Song Jue and asked.

"What else can we do? We rush over and burn everything they have now! We pull the rug from under their asses!" Song Jue said.

"Heh, heh. Interesting. Why should we rush out if we just want to lit the fire on them? Fire arrows would get it done. Those woods and others will burn up immediately!" Ye Xiao said.

"Oh! That's right! We just let loose of some fire arrows and burn the hell out of them! I will get on it now!" Song Jue was going to do the arrangement.

"What? Wait! Uncle Song. Please. You are my uncle. You are my great uncle. I have always been confused why haven't you even been promoted to a higher position in the military, since you have been following my father for so many years after all. Now I understand it. It is a great luck that you don't get to lead the army. If you do, I can't imagine how many people will die for nothing..." Ye Xiao stopped Song Jue and said.

"Screw it! Am I being too nice to you? How dare you say that to me? Tell me. Just tell me what is the problem with my plan!" Song Jue was furious. That was such a humiliation!

Ye Xiao pointed at the flag, which was making sounds because of the wind. "Uncle Song, look. Wind comes from south-west. We are facing it from the enemies. The next few days, the wind direction

will remain. And it will be strong wind! Do you know what it means? Once we lit up those woods, as the wind blows the fire up, we will burn ourselves out for sure!"

Song Jue was stunned. After a while, he said, "That... That is true... We can't set the fire... However, they are going to set the fire when they finish piling the woods around us. Are we just going to sit still and see the fire gets on us?"

"It doesn't mean we shouldn't set fire in any case. If we can set fire on the right spot, it will be safe for us anyway. We need to get deep into them and set fire inside them. That will burn them out first!" Ye Xiao casually answered.

"Hmm. That's great. I will do it myself. It should be easy as pie for me to get into their place. I will get ready now!" Song Jue was thrilled up again and prepared to do it.

"What a pity. This is a practical plan, but not a successful one!" Ye Xiao said.

"Why so?" Song Jue was confused.

"They are working on the fire attack so obviously. Then they definitely have done something to defend from our superior cultivators. They might set the fire in advance as long as they noticed you. Even if it is you, this is too risky! They wouldn't need lots of men to do this. Two capable ones were enough for them. They just need to keep you from setting the fire up. They just need more time for themselves to set the fire against you. It should be enough to burn you, even kill you," Ye Xiao explained.

"Hmm... I am not afraid. Maybe I will fail if I go alone, but if Zhao Pingtian, Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun, even you, go with me, we will succeed. Even if we unluckily fail... we can definitely kill our way out. You know this is going to work, right?" Song Jue said.

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "It is a better plan. Even if we fail, we are

very likely able to get out safely. However, any one of us gets hurt, our men will lose faith in this battle!"

"Besides, I don't think... this is just a fire attack. It should be more than that..." His eyes looked sharp, "Maybe there will be poison... I am not sure."

No matter what he said, he just didn't want to stop Wenren Jianyin's fire attack!

Song jue was stunned. "Wenren Jianyin wouldn't do such a vile thing... would he?"

Ye Xiao looked at Song Jue and spoke in a deep voice, "Why not? There is nothing forbidden in a war. If I were Wenren Jianyin, I would do much more than poison. I would set up lots of different traps and watch as the enemies jump into it! Uncle Song, you are such a tough warrior in the battle, but you always ignore some details. What if they prepared some kerosene around, wouldn't you use it? Of course you will! What if there is poison in it? If you are weakened by the poison, do you think you can still get out of the sea of fire easily?"

Song Jue took in a cold breath. He suddenly didn't know what to say!

Apparently, what Ye Xiao said was very possible to happen and it would definitely hit Song Jue right on the face!

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Let's just wait and see."

"But if we keep waiting... we will still be roasted," Song Jue murmured.

"Relax. I know what to do!" Ye Xiao looked calm and he said, "If Wenren Jianyin didn't go with such a plan, I will have to wait till the support arrives. Well, since that old man decided to do this... I won't show any kindness anymore!"

...

Chapter 715: Sorry!

Sorry!

"Really? You have a plan?" Song Jue was surprised.

The current situation should be despairing for everybody.

Song Jue had been making suggestions to Ye Xiao about how to stop the enemy's fire. However, no matter how he tried, he couldn't think of a way to stop that fire attack.

Even if there was a rainstorm...

It might take a long time to put out such a big fire.

What was Ye Xiao's plan?

No matter how people asked him, he wouldn't say a word about it. He just kept showing a calm face. He gave an order, "Group up! Follow my command! Prepare for attack. The fight today... may be the only opportunity we have to win the battle! The fire attack they are planning on is our chance!"

Everybody was confused. However, that was an order. No matter how they thought, they just got prepared for a fight.

Nobody could think of alternatives, so they could only believe in their commander now.

All soldiers were gathering quietly.

Commander Ye was standing on the wall looking at the soldiers.

In the camps of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

Wenren Jianyin felt a headache.

Wenren Chuchu looked at her uncle. She wondered whether he could really give the order to set the fire on!

People died in the battle. No matter what was used in the battle, it was normal.

However, to burn out an entire place and all living thing around it... that was heinous.

After the fire, in thousand of miles, millions of regular people would lose their means of living.

It wouldn't be recovered even after decades.

Wenren Jinayin was silent. Suddenly, his face turned vile. He had one and a half million men to fight against over one hundred thousand men, yet he had to use such a heinous plan...

That was the biggest failure to him already!

"Uncle, is it really that important to win?" Wenren Chuchu looked at him and asked gently.

"Are you really going to destroy this place and make it a wasted land for decades, just to win a war?"

Wenren Jianyin was deep in thought while feeling extreme pain. He looked around. Hundreds of generals were looking at him in silence.

If he didn't win this battle, these brothers of his would be punished when they returned. Some of them might even lose their families!

"I... I don't have a choice!" He gritted with his teeth, closed his eyes, looked to the sky and spoke painfully.

"Don't you..." Wenren Chuchu sighed.

She decided not to say anything.

Two kingdoms were at war. There was no choice.

"Faster!" Wenren Jianyin gave the order. "Pour the kerosene too!"

"Commander, should we... should we add something more in it? Just like what we do on the kerosene in that tent?" one general asked.

Wenren Jianyin's face was twisting. He murmured, "There is still

a bottom line there... even though we are going to do something dishonest..."

He spoke viciously.

It sounded gloomy.

The general didn't dare to say more; he just left the tent.

Wenren Chuchu had been observing the Iron Peak. She saw a man in white clothes standing on the wall all the time.

The man didn't seem nervous about what was happening down the battlefield. He just acted casual.

[What is in your mind?]

"Commander, why they still haven't arranged an attack to us? Don't they know they are in a deadly situation now?" one general asked. "Reasonably, even if they know they can't stop our plan, they should have sent people over to try and do something... After all, it is the only hope they have. They may at least kill some of our men. Isn't it such a painful tragedy to be burned out at once?"

The others all felt strange too.

"Are they giving up on this? Because they know they can't win?" One other general guessed.

They looked at the white flag on the top of Iron Peak, flying in the air, and just couldn't understand why.

"Are they planning on any scheme?" Somebody said, "We... we have to be cautious."

Suddenly, the others sneered at him. "Scheme? I would love to hear it. What scheme can they possibly have for this? Even if the ten most capable generals in the world work together, there will still be no solution. The only thing they can do is to sigh and pray!"

"Why haven't they done anything? So they just wait for death? They have much more superior cultivators than we do. If not for their superior cultivators, we should have won the battle long ago!

This plan is the last thing we want to do."

"Who am supposed to ask? Maybe they all give up!"

"Commander, I am afraid they may be planning some tricks here. They might just be waiting for us to set the fire," one general walked close to Wenren Jianyin and said.

Wenren Jianyin took in a deep breath. His eyes were like the eyes of an eagle, sharp and merciless. "Even if they are... we will have to continue!"

"We have no other choice!"

"Stick to the plan! Move on!"

"We have to win this fight! No matter what it costs! This victory is worth any sacrifice!"

"Yes, Commander!"

"Set the fire at midnight!"

Wenren Jianyin stared at the Iron Peak and spoke the words.

"Commander, isn't it a bit late? There are still twelve hours before midnight. What if they flee before midnight..." one general said.

"I want them to flee. I am giving them time to get off." Wenren Jianyin spoke in a deep voice, "I would rather kill them in the battle than burn them alive there."

"Yes, Commander. I understand."

Their soldiers were marching ahead. The woods had been pushed to ten meters from the wall. However, the soldiers on the wall did nothing, but just stared down at them coldly. They just let the woods to pile up under them!

Kerosene was poured on.

More and more woods were piled up there...

Nobody came out to stop it at all! None of them ever tried to flee!

They just watched.

They looked bland.

Wenren Jianyin had been watching his enemies.

None of them was fleeing.

They just stood on the wall. There was going to be a big fire at any second, yet none of them were escaping. It seemed they had decided to die with Iron Peak!

They would rather die defending the kingdom!

"I am pushed to the deathtrap, so are they!"

Wenren Jianyin sighed and murmured, "Sorry!"

...

Chapter 716: Rolling Fire

The soldiers were all getting ready for a fight, even though none of them understood what Ye Xiao was planning. They just kept getting ready for it. Several men were still standing on the wall.

Ye Xiao, Song Jue, Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, and Liu Changjun!

Only the five of them could face the rolling heat of the big fire without getting hurt!

"It will take more than three days for this fire to burn out!" Song Jue sighed. "After this, all livings within one thousand miles will be vanished! In hundreds of years, this place will be a land of waste."

Ye Xiao looked at the flames getting closer and closer.

He could feel the air getting hotter and hotter around them, and he could feel the floor was getting hot. However, he remained calm while staring at the flame all the time.

The fire was set hundreds of meters away and burned the way over. It was burning from over a hundred meters now, and it only took two breaths for it to get so close!

The southwest wind was blowing heavier and heavier, and the fire was turning bigger and bigger. The flame was rising up, yet not to the highest point yet.

However, normal people could never bear the heat they were bearing now.

In the Iron Peak, some soldiers had started to stifle. The fire didn't just bring heat; it also burned the oxygen in the air. The soldiers breathed like swallowing burning charcoal. They felt choked in the throat.

"I mean, if we keep waiting on, we are going to be roasted. Even though we can still handle it, our soldiers down there can not,"

Song Jue kept breathing softly and spoke forcibly.

The rolling fire and its smoke made Song Jue uncomfortable, even though he was such a superior cultivator.

In other words, even Song Jue couldn't handle such a situation, not to mention the others!

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Not yet! Just wait!"

"Really? Still waiting..." Song Jue showed a bitter face.

Ning Biluo and the other three were also enduring the heat. Their faces all turned red.

"If any of you can't stand it, just get down." Ye Xiao, "You won't be facing the flame directly like up here. You will feel better down there."

They shook their heads.

"This is weird. I have experienced a massive fire once. I was right in the burning mountain back then, but it didn't feel as horrible as this one. Why is it..." Zhao Pingtian felt it a bit difficult to breathe.

"This is completely different," Ye Xiao calmly spoke. "There are always spaces to hide among the plants on the mountain. You are definitely capable enough to find a safe spot. You may feel the heat, but it won't kill you."

"What we are dealing with is totally different." He said, "This is a flat land and we have nowhere to hide, not to mention the wind is blowing over to us. There is no space for us! The flame is filling the entire place. We can't escape it."

"What we are dealing with now is a completely different story.

"If you guys run through this fire, you may get hurt. It won't kill you, but it is impossible to get through it safely.

"Those who are in lower level than you are definitely going to die in such a fire!"

He then laughed.

"How unbending you are! You actually laughed at this?" Song Jue looked at his nephew with surprise.

"Victory is coming! Why can't I laugh?" Ye Xiao looked at the opposite and said, "Look. Their men are retreating in a hurry. As the fire is on, it is difficult for them to commander their men!"

"They thought they are far enough from the fire, yet they aren't.

"That is why they panic.

"As the fire rolls up bigger, they will be in bigger chaos!"

He blandly spoke, "Then we will make our strike!"

"Strike? Well. Sound good. Just tell me how?"

Song Jue pointed at the enormous sea of fire and said, "It has blocked our way out now. The gates are very likely burned out... How do we make the strike? Do we rush out through the fire?"

"Our soldiers will be burned into f*cking ashes before we make it out. No. There may even be no ashes left..."

Song Jue rolled up his eyes and said, "Look. We should leave. Don't act like you are controlling everything here... It doesn't work!"

Ye Xiao smiled but said nothing.

The flame had rushed up to top of the wall. - Puff! - The fire had covered the figures of Ye Xiao and the others!

Wenren Chuchu and Wenren Jianyin were both watching them in the heat caused by the fire.

In their sights, the air was twisting because of the fire. They had seen the enemies gathering on the wall, but as the fire was on, everybody got off.

However, Commander Ye was still standing there with a few men!

Wenren Chuchu felt sour in the heart looking at it.

[Is that... the sorrow and grief of a hero at the end?]

They saw the five of them standing on the wall like five statues. The fire was rolling up to them, yet none of them moved... It seemed they were ready to die...

Wenren Jianyin actually felt sympathetic.

[If I were him, I guess... I would do the same thing, to die along with it?]

[One has righteous ambition yet turns out powerless. Hero dies in the end.]

[Isn't it?]

"They are all tough men!" Wenren Jianyin sighed and closed his eyes. "Ye Xiao is indeed son of Ye Nantian! How admirable, the tough bones he got!"

Wenren Chuchu bit on the lips.

[You... are you really going to give up on this?]

[Why didn't you just rush out for a fight?]

[You have strong capabilities. Even surrounded by million troops, you still have the chance to get away! What is happening to you?]

[We both have a bright future ahead. We belong to a much higher realm. How can you just die in a war of this mortal world?]

The rolling fire was getting bigger in the howling wind. After a while, it swallowed the top of the wall entirely!

The five men on the wall immediately disappeared from their sights.

They seemed to all become ashes in the rolling flame!

...

Chapter 717: The Extreme Cold!

The five of them had vanished, but they were still in the sights of the men of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. The five of them were cold, brave, calm, helpless but heroic!

Without fear!

They sacrificed themselves for their country!

The fire was surging.

The million troops of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, including those who had been backing off, all stopped there, looking at the top of the wall with respect.

They were admiring their enemies, because they were honorable men!

"When we have conquered Kingdom of Chen, the first thing I will do is to set a monument for Lord Ye and his men!"

Wenren Jianyin spoke in a deep voice, "Such heroic figures! They should be remembered in the history!"

The others nodded to agree.

However, at this moment, something shot out from the top of the wall all of a sudden. It was moving fast towards the center of the fire.

None of them realized what it was. The air was twisted because of the heat of the flame. They couldn't even be sure if there was really something that flew out. Maybe it was an illusion?

However, the next moment, something happened! Something none of them could believe!

...

When Ye Xiao and the other four disappeared in the dense smoke and the rolling fire, there was a sense of coldness that showed up

in the place!

There was actually coldness in this burning space.

The coldness made the men of both sides feel shocked, as if they saw ghosts in day time.

The men of the Kingdom of Chen had gotten away from the fire zone. They were staying on the edge though. At the moment, the fire was rolling up. The men who were closer to it were nearly roasted. It was a good thing for them to feel something cold under such a situation, but they felt scared because of the coldness!

This place should be extremely hot because of the burning heat, but why was there the feeling of coldness?

It wasn't just cold for a moment. It was getting even colder!

The next moment, the feeling of coldness was getting stronger and stronger... It spread out in the place!

Even though the fire was rolling everywhere, it couldn't get the coldness off! It felt like it was winter!

No way!

It wouldn't be this cold even in winter!

Facing the scorching fire, the soldiers actually felt freezing. They were even shaking!

It was real coldness!

"Look! The fire!"

Somebody shouted with fear. Apparently, something strange happened.

It seemed the rolling fire suddenly met something antagonistic. It was like a huge net that was made from water, fog, snow and ice, covering the fire and suppressing it down.

The net was just covering it. It kept shrinking, putting off the fire.

After a while, a stream of coldness suddenly burst in silence.

- Pop! -

The fire was completely put off at the same time!

The smoke disappeared too!

The fire was replaced by freezing ice covering the entire place. The ice continuously spread out. It went further and further, covering a much bigger area. It was moving faster and faster, and all the area that was on fire was now frozen. However, the ice didn't stop. It kept expanding.

While the weird ice was covering the land, a fissure showed up on the floor! - Crack! - The land cracked apart from east to west!

It was bottomless, about three meters wide!

The land cracked because it was frozen too fast by the extreme coldness!

Everybody was shocked!

That was a hell shocking scene!

"What... What the hell is this? How can this happen? Is it the nature? Or is it human behavior?" Wenren Jianyin was astonished. He felt extremely terrified.

The hair on the back of his neck prickled with fear!

All the soldiers and generals were shaking due to the freezing temperature.

Their faces were pale, not only because of the cold, but also because they were scared. Such an incredible thing just happened after the rolling fire was on. It mustn't be the will of nature. It was definitely human behavior, and that made it even scarier for them!

Their weapons seemed like frozen ice, nearly freezing their hands too. Some of them couldn't endure the coldness, so they wanted to drop their weapons. However, they discovered they couldn't even

move their fingers.

Their fingers were sticking on the weapons. Some of them dropped their weapons, but the skins on their hands were ripped off. The reason why they didn't feel pain was that their hands had been frozen... They couldn't feel it...

The coldness appeared within such a short time and it caused the panic! What was it!

None of these men had experienced such coldness in their lives!

It actually froze the entire burning place!

That was just unbelievable.

How could they believe such a thing if they didn't see it themselves?

It was not only ordinary coldness in this place, but it was extreme coldness, or absolute zero!

"Comm... Commander..." A general was quivering. Apparently, he couldn't stand the coldness anymore. "We... We should be... better retreat n... now... If... If not... Our brothers... I am afraid... they... ahhhh..."

He was quivering and he couldn't speak a full sentence now.

Wenren Jianyin was shocked. This general was only in the middle levels of Earth Origin Stage, but he was better than ninety-nine percent of his men. He was in such a status... What about others...

"Retreat!" Wenren Jianyin made a long sigh.

The woodpile that was burning in flames was now a huge pile of ice! It even looked transparent.

It turned extreme hot to extreme cold. Such cold qi was incredibly scary!

...

Chapter 718: Gods Want Me Dead!

As Wenren Jianyin gave the order to retreat, all his soldiers felt like they were blessed by gods. They all started to run off the place. They couldn't stay there anymore. It was too cold...

Many of them fell on the floor when they started to move, but it turned out their legs were frozen. They got up and kept rubbing their legs. They tried to hold their legs high to activate their frozen legs.

Stay there any longer would cause them to be frozen to death.

However, as they just started to move, murderous shouts sounded from everywhere!

"Kill!"

A shout that was so loud that it nearly shocked the entire world.

The gate of Iron Peak was opened. In fact, it was broken. The fire had burned the gate into pieces of iron chunks. It was impossible to open it. However, as it was frozen, it became crisp. Song Yue hit it with his iron fist and it was broken into pieces!

A huge flag was flying in the air, rushing out the gate at first. The soldiers in Iron Peak whoever were still able to fight all rushed out like they had taken viagra! They were like tigers and their horses were like dragons!

Men and their horses rushed out with rolling murderous qi!

The men on the horses were all wearing heavy clothes and warm hats. They even had put on the gloves. They had obviously prepared for this.

A white shadow flashed over and got on the highest point of the ice. That was exactly Ye Xiao, Commander Ye!

He didn't hesitate at all. With a fierce fist attack, it broke a huge hole in the ice mountain. He jumped into the hole and then

jumped out, his face covered by ice. He shouted, "Kill!"

He moved forward and he was actually sliding ahead.

That was right. He was sliding.

The ground was frozen into a layer of ice. As he rushed forward, he was sliding fast on the ice ground. He didn't even push himself a bit.

His men saw him do this. They all learned from him and jumped off the horses, starting to slide on the ice as a group.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Ye Xiao's army had started a massive counterattack at this moment!

Wenren Jianyin was stunned. His eyeballs nearly popped out. They saw the enemies wearing in heavy clothes, gloves and hats. He shouted, "Gods want me die!"

He then spat out blood!

It was autumn time, when summer just ended.

His men were all wearing light clothes. They couldn't keep warm from such extreme coldness. However, his enemies were all wearing heavy clothes, gloves, hats and all that were prepared for winter. They had prepared for this.

No matter what they were wearing, it was not enough to defend themselves from the invasion of the coldness though. Yet it was much better than wearing light clothes!

More importantly... with gloves, they could at least hold their weapons.

That was too important!

A small difference sentenced the failure of them!

The Army of Kingdom of Lan-Feng had lost faith on this. They were simply moving in a mess. In their minds, they thought the

gods blessed the Kingdom of Chen. They completely lost confidence.

How could it suddenly become so cold if it wasn't the will of gods! It was autumn!

If it wasn't the gods' will, what was it?

There was nothing Wenren Jianyin could do about it, no matter how capable he was. He couldn't even gather his army together, not to mention to arrange an attack.

He felt like his heart was burning. All thoughts were blasted. He was a famous general, a great one in the world. However, all that he could do now was to watch his army collapsing. How did that feel?

He spat out blood a few more times. Suddenly, he stood straight up and stared at the sky. With all his power, he shouted with grief, "Heavens..."

Another spit of blood!

That was fresh red. It was blood of his heart!

Then he fell off the horse.

The army of the Kingdom of Chen was rolling over to them like tides.

Even their horseshoes were covered by cloths!

Wenren Chuchu held Wenren Jianyin, who was in a coma. She kept backing off fast like wind.

"Formation! Prepare the defense!"

Wenren Chuchu shouted.

Many generals were shouting the same, however, orders just didn't work anymore in this army. The camp was in chaos. Nobody heard to the orders.

Enemies showed up wearing heavy clothes. That destroyed the

last bit of hope in their hearts!

[Why would the fire be put out?]

[Why would it suddenly become so unbelievably cold?]

[Why would they prepare heavy clothes in advance?]

It was still a question in their hearts.

It was exactly what happened in this battle.

Nobody had the time to think deep into it.

Before Ye Xiao and his men rushed into their camp, they had already fallen into chaos.

What a legend, Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. He changed the nature, interfered with the season, switched the sun and the moon, and altered the temperature... Wasn't it the power of gods? Who could defeat such a man?

...

In fact, the living legend of the world, Feng Zhiling of Ling-Bao Hall, who was also Ye Xiao Commander Ye, did this all because of luck.

He had never thought that Wenren Jianyin would make such a fire attack. It wasn't a bad plan though. If Ye Xiao wasn't the commander, instead it was anybody else, Kingdom of Chen would definitely lose it.

They would probably leave the Iron Peak to the enemies' hands, unless they wished to all die in the fire.

Surely, they could also rush out for a final fight. It seemed they had a chance to break the woodpiles and stop the fire, however, that wouldn't bring them victory either. All men they had were only over one hundred thousand. Rushing out to fight against one and a half million men outside? That was completely hopeless. They would lose it for sure!

That was why, when Wenren Jianyin decided to make that fire attack, he thought it was the best option he got. Although it was against the nature and the moral value, he decided to do it!

However, the fact was, when Ye Xiao knew Wenren Jianyin was planning that fire attack, he almost exclaimed because of excitement.

Wenren Jianyin set the fire because he wanted Ye Xiao to go out and start a tough fight. Unexpectedly, it was wonderful for Ye Xiao.

...

Chapter 719: Nine Thousand Miles Hunt!

When Ye Xiao realized what Wenren Jianyin was planning, he immediately got everybody to prepare heavy clothes and anything that could keep themselves warm. Within one night, he boiled over a dozen vats of water with dan beads in it which could keep the soldiers warm. Everyone drank some before the fight started.

None of his men knew what it was for.

That's reasonable. Why would normal people prepare heavy clothes when there was going to be a big fire burning over? They believed they wouldn't need more warmth when the fire was on.

No matter what, the Western Army had left lots of reserves even though most of them were dead. Iron Peak was the most important barrier for the Kingdom of Chen. There were all kinds of supplies in the tower. Besides, all they needed were things for only less than two hundred thousand men. Everybody got what they were told to prepare!

However, they were still confused about it. They wondered what their Commander was planning!

Ye Xiao surely knew clearly what he was doing and he knew he was doing the right thing.

Such a fire might be impossible to withstand for any other people in the world...

However, it wasn't for Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao had something that could perfectly suppress any fire!

The Cosmic Hades!

When the fire reached its strongest point, Ye Xiao threw out the Cosmic Hades.

After the Cosmic Hades, he also threw out five pieces of Spiritual Jade.

The Spiritual Jade aroused the raging extreme cold qi inside Cosmic Hades.

That was the second time it burst it out!

The first time, it created an ice mountain outside Chen-Xing City which existed for ten thousand years!

That was a miracle in the world!

Cosmic Hades could create a huge ice mountain in summer. Now that it used up several times of Spiritual Jade than the first time, of course it would put out the fire!

Ye Xiao didn't think it would fail at all.

He was more than confident that it would work perfectly!

As expected, the fire was put out. Within a short time, the periphery of a few kilometers were frozen!

Ye Xiao was indeed a 'living legend' according to what he had just done!

Of course, Cosmic Hades did most of the job. Ye Xiao just made a plan for it!

What happened was that Ye Xiao made a wonderful plan to put out the fire with extreme coldness, and lead the army to attack the enemies. He had brought victory to the Kingdom of Chen in the fight against the Kingdom of Lan-Feng! That was what happened!

Ye Xiao's army rushed out for the final strike. Men of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had lost their faith right before Ye Xiao marched out for the fight!

How could he not win this?

When Ye Xiao rushed out for the attack, he put away the Cosmic Hades back to the Space immediately. Otherwise... this entire place would become a huge ice mountain just like the one outside Chen-Xing City...

Even though he had taken back the Cosmic Hades, the cold didn't stop spreading out. The two mountains on the two sides actually became two ice mountains that wouldn't not melt in ten thousand years!

The same ice mountains showed up in the world again.

He had thrown in five hundred pieces of Spiritual Jade after all. That was several times than the last time. Surely, he was not as weak as he used to be now. Even though the extreme cold qi was having a reverse impact on him, he could handle it himself!

...

"Kill!"

Ye Xiao and the others rushed into the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. As he shouted, swords and axes were shining. Lights rushed up to the clouds!

After that, the main troops of his army rushed in an overwhelming way.

They were like hot soups spilling into snow, destroying everything like cutting down withered woods. They met no resistance at all.

The army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had lost every positivity they needed. Many of them didn't even hold any weapons. Even though there were those who did hold their weapons, they couldn't sway it at all. This was simply a massacre. They just kept running away in chaos.

At this moment, even if Ye Nantian, or even if all the famous generals were there supporting the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, it still wouldn't change anything!

This was exactly like god's will for them. It crashed down every bit of their confidence!

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng's army was collapsing. Ye Xiao led his

one hundred and thirty men chasing after them. They kept shouting and killing all the way after them, without any stop.

Honestly, Ye Xiao didn't dare to give any time for the enemies to rest.

For Wenren Jianyin, he only needed one day to pull together all the fleeing soldiers again. Then they would become a strong army again. Ye Xiao had to keep chasing and hunt them until... until they were too exhausted to continue.

With this thought in their minds, Ye Xiao's army kept chopping off heads and splashing blood of the enemies along the way.

The army of the Kingdom of Chen, especially the soldiers of the Western Army who had survived, finally vented the anger and grudge in their chests, which they had been enduring for half a year.

One hundred and thirty thousand men chasing after almost a million men, like following a bunch of ducks!

Slaughtering and chasing more with much less men like this was definitely a unique event in the history. It was something impossible to happen, especially because one of the great generals in history was the exact person losing the battle. However, miracle happened...

The hunt lasted seven days and seven nights!

As Ye Xiao's army chased the losing army, they reached a town. The fleeing ones didn't seem like stopping. They just kept moving through the town. Ye Xiao's army didn't stop either. They just kept chasing the enemies. The general who had been guarding this town didn't have a proper fight, because the soldiers from his own kingdom ran and crashed his men into chaos. The only thing he could do was to lead his men to join the fleeing army.

And another town was taken down fast.

Soldiers of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng didn't get to fight at all. All

they did was to follow the million troops and run away from the towns they were supposed to defend...

Seven days and seven nights, one hundred and thirty thousand men pushed all the men from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng out of the territory of the Kingdom of Chen!

The lands lost from Wu Gonglie's hands were now reclaimed!

As they kept chasing, they actually conquered a few towns that belonged to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. After they had reached the protective boundary of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, Sky Nerve City, they eventually stopped.

Not that they didn't want to keep going, they were just exhausted!

Seven full days chasing without any rests, no matter how strong the soldiers were, even if their bodies were made of irons and their vigor could shock the world, they couldn't go on with it anymore.

They still felt spirited, like they could kill a dragon.

However, they were physically broken!

One would run out of power at some point!

Seven full days, when they were thirsty, they drank while running; when they were hungry, they ate while running... That was how they kept chasing the enemies. When they felt really sleepy, they cut themselves with their sharp swords...

...

Chapter 720: Glorious Victory

They had travelled eight thousand and nine hundred miles for this!

Almost nine thousand miles, they ran and killed within seven full days.

Only about twenty percent of the horses in Ye Xiao's army survived the long run.

Even those living ones were all damaged.

About eighty percent of the horses died on the way!

Sky Nerve City took in all those fleeing soldiers through the gate. The soldiers finally took a breath of relief when they finally got to their strong city. However, some of them still died when they finally sat down for some food. They just died sitting there.

They had been extremely nervous, hungry, and terrified in the past seven days. They were mentally broken. What their bodies could do was merely escape. Once they were safe, the pain and fatigue hit them hard. Thousands of them just died while sleeping. They wouldn't wake up forever. They died in Sky Nerve City.

Wenren Jianyin's million troops had one and a half million men. Less than three hundred thousand of them made it back to Sky Nerve City, all injured.

Many of the men were trampled when they were fleeing in chaos. As one man fell down, dozens would fall after him. Horses and men would run up and trample the ones on the floor. Lots of them became a pile of flesh with blood.

General or regular soldier, as long as they fell down, they wouldn't have the chance to get up again!

Hundreds of thousands men died being trampled in chaos!

Everyone of them had lost their mind and moral sensitivity. They

didn't even know how to use the weapons in their hands when they met their enemies...

During the seven days, Wenren Jianyin woke up several times. He spat out blood every time he woke up and then passed out again. At the end, he was seriously sick. He was still lying in the bed, unconscious. If Wenren Chuchu didn't keep looking after him the past seven days, he would have died already.

...

Ye Xiao knew that his army really had to rest, so he set a camp in front of the Sky Nerve City.

That night, only a few assassins were on night watch. Most of the men were deep asleep as they were all exhausted. When they realized they could finally sleep and rest, some of them didn't even eat before they fell asleep.

Some of them even started to snooze before they lied down.

In fact, if Ye Xiao didn't urge everyone to drink a bowl of the magic water with dan beads in it, thousands of them might have already died!

Running and killing for several days without any rest, not only those of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng were exhausted, Ye Xiao's men also couldn't hold it up anymore. However, Feng Monarch had lots of supreme dan beads. None of his men died during the seven days. That was such a miracle that was unique in the history. Nobody could even imitate him!

Ye Xiao was one of the men who were on watch at the night. After several days of tough work, only Ye Xiao and a few others still had the power to stay up. In fact, Ye Xiao was thinking that if people came out from the Sky Nerve City to attack, he couldn't defend all his men. The one hundred and thirty thousand men would get slaughtered in the dark!

However, this was a night of peace though, because Sky Nerve

City was in a mess at the moment. People in the city didn't know what the situation was yet. None of them dared to make any reckless attack first. Besides, they had to take care of the wounded soldiers who had just arrived. That was enough to keep them busy.

The city was filled with moaning and snoring.

Many of the soldiers just slept on the street as they really could hold it to the camp. They just lied on the street in groups. They looked exhausted.

They were truly exhausted!

Wenren Chuchu was still sober, because she wasn't a normal person. The others, including those generals, all fell down. They were also regular people. How could they not feel tired?

All those who had been fighting in this battle, no matter in which sides, had lose weight, becoming skinny in the process.

A few physicians were busy staying around Wenren Jianyin. They looked gloomy.

The general who had been guarding Sky Nerve City had been making arrangements for the wounded soldiers.

"Princess, what happened? We cut right through into the Kingdom of Chen not long ago. We were so close to take their capital down!" The general who guarded Sky Nerve City was Meng Chuanshi. He was a good general too. At the moment, he was lost in confusion.

"Million troops of ours, marching with songs and vigor. We were winning it. So close. We were so close to it. All we needed was one more push to break the Kingdom of Chen, to destroy our enemy. How come? How come we end up like this? All of sudden?"

General Meng felt that he was freaking out. He had to get the answer.

If it wasn't Wenren Jianyin, but other people, maybe it was

understandable.

But it was Wenren Jianyin!

The famous war god in the world!

They were not only defeated, but also in such a miserable way...

That was such a misery.

One million and two hundred thousand men of Wenren Jianyin, three hundred thousand men of Wenren Chuchu, that was one and a half million in total. However, less than three hundred thousand wounded soldiers survived. The others were all dead and lost!

The great loss of this fight had shocked the foundation of the entire Kingdom of Lan-Feng!

A strong army which was under Wenren Jianyin's command actually got defeated so bad! Even... Ye Nantian couldn't defeat Wenren Jianyin like this.

"It truly is an unreasonable fight." Wenren Chuchu sighed. "If there is any reason, the reason must be... heaven's will!"

She bitterly smiled.

"Heaven's will? How so?" Meng Chuanshi couldn't understand it.

"It's true. Heaven's will." Wenren Chuchu sighed. "By then, we have already taken the positive position in all sides. We have been marching ahead like a sharp knife. All we needed to do was to break down the last barrier of the Kingdom of Chen. We were so close."

"At that moment, the enemies got their support. They were so tough. Other than that, Ye Nantian's army was already on their way too. Ten to fifteen days, that's all it takes for them to arrive."

She said, "We didn't have much time by then. That was why Commander decided to use fire attack, in order to end the war as soon as possible..."

She told Meng Chuanshi everything.

Meng Chuanshi was shocked. "That should be a perfect plan! Right strategy, right place, right time! How could it fail? We should have won the battle no matter how!"

...

Chapter 721: Is It Fate?

"Not only you think so, we all did." Wenren Chuchu sighed. "But none of us could see that right when the fire was burning the top of Iron Peak, the entire world changed!

"An extreme coldness arrived. The fire which had covered hundreds of miles was put out right away. The world was frozen. Even the ground cracked because of the extreme coldness!"

"It is early autumn. Our men were all wearing light clothes. How were we supposed to defend from the invasion of the coldness? Their men, they were all wearing heavy clothes. They had been prepared for it. They knew the coldness in advance.

"Our men lost in every aspects, mentally and physically. Our soldiers couldn't even pick up their weapons. When they held their weapons, they couldn't drop them, because if they did, skins on their hands would be ripped off... Our enemies were fully prepared. They were doing perfect.

"When we just realized they were all dressed and prepared, they started the finally attack on us..."

Wenren Chuchu's face looked gloomy.

"It is fate... coldness..." Meng Chuanshu felt like she was telling a story on the books. He felt terrified after hearing the truth.

"How come? Heaven's will? Fate? Is it really?" His eyes were opened so big like they were about to pop out. "How is it possible? Extreme cold? In this season? Even in the coldest days in winter, there is no way it could be cold like that... Why?"

Wenren Chuchu closed her eyes. "There is no conclusion on this yet. None of us know what exactly was going on back then. It was like a dream. When we woke up, we had already lost it."

Meng Chuanshi was shocked. Apparently, he couldn't understand what really happened.

He murmured, "Is the Kingdom of Chen blessed by heavens? They were losing the battle in the south too. At the very important moment, a huge mountain actually fell down and blocked everything. It saved them!"

"After that, when we attacked them at the same time in three sides, they were losing. We were so close to take them down, yet... twice... there it came, the rainstorm... and we lost the opportunity."

"This is the third time. We were so close to win the war eventually. It suddenly turned extremely cold... We lost it again..." Meng Chuanshi was shocked. He looked terrible.

"Around the Kingdom of Chen, there was a huge ice mountain that suddenly appeared."

"Before Master Bai left, he gave the King of the Kingdom of Chen a sword, the Holy Providence..."

"Feng Zhiling of Ling-Bao Hall is recognized as the qualified rival of Master Bai. He was the other legend in the world. He had shown the intent to support the Kingdom of Chen long ago."

His face turned pale. "Everything indicates... that the Kingdom of Chen was blessed by heavens. The world is tending to the Kingdom of Chen... Could it be..."

Wenren Chuchu's face looked bad. She said, "General Meng, I guess you should mind your words!"

Meng Chuanshi trembled and then kneeled down. "I have been worrying about the war. I didn't mean to say that. Please, I beg your forgiveness."

Wenren Chuchu was upset. She wouldn't bother punishing him. She just waved her hand to send him off.

No matter how tough she could be, she was shocked by what Meng Chuanshi said.

In the pasted several days, not only Meng Chuanshi had said such words. Who among the three hundred thousand surviving soldiers hadn't thought of it?

None!

"Is it really fate? Does the heaven truly want the Kingdom of Chen to win?"

She was lost.

She wouldn't have such a thought until this moment. That was reasonable. She was the heir of Misty Cloud Palace. She was more experienced and well-informed than most others. That was why she had different views than the soldiers. The huge mountain from the sky, the rainstorm, the ice mountain, and the day when the two great sects were wiped out, she knew that Feng Zhiling did none of them.

She knew Feng Zhiling and Ye Xiao was the same guy. That was why she was more sure that he wasn't capable enough to do those things!

If the strange scene didn't happen right in front of her eyes, she wouldn't believe this extreme cold qi was from Ye Xiao!

Who made that ice mountain outside Chen-Xing City? The answer was obvious!

If Ye Xiao could do these both, could he also make the mountain fall from the sky in the battle and create the rainstorm too? Was it Ye Xiao who destroyed both the great sects within one day?

It was strange how people's mind works. When one tiny part of one's theory turns out to be wrong, all the others will be unauthentic, no matter how one wished it was true.

[Was I wrong from the beginning?]

[He could do two of these miracles, then maybe he did all of them? These miracles all benefit the Kingdom of Chen after all!]

Well, in fact, except the mountain from the sky in the south and the ruins of the two great sects, Ye Xiao had connection to all those things! Well, he did some himself for sure!

Actually, even the mountain and the two great sects were related to him!

Now, even though Wenren Chuchu had been so sure that Ye Xiao wasn't as legendary as people said, she was moved. The idea about how Feng Zhiling was a legend and how the Kingdom of Chen was blessed by the heavens was deep in people's hearts!

With all the things that had happened, the Kingdom of Chen became a sign of something that overwhelmed the entire world! When people thought of the Kingdom of Chen, it reminded them a miracle! It reminded them of the fate!

That was the great victory of the Kingdom of Chen!

It was even more like a victory than a fight in the Iron Peak!

...

Chapter 722: Trembling Land of Han-Yang!

Trembling Land of Han-Yang!

In fact, after the fight, people all thought that the Kingdom of Chen was blessed by heavens!

Everybody in either kingdom believed so.

Other than that, people also believe that Feng Monarch was a peerless legend!

Wenren Chuchu was tangled in her heart.

When she made that deal with Ye Xiao, she did not think it would end like this. In fact, she believed the Kingdom of Lan-Feng would win. At least, they wouldn't be defeated in such a way.

However, things were completely changed in only two days! Chaos filled her world!

She remembered Ye Xiao standing on the top of the wall while the fire was rolling up to him. She was shocked. [You... You planned all this? What a legend! This is such a legendary moment!]

[I thought it was puffery when everybody said you are a living legend. I could never see how you could defeat a million troops with your one hundred thousand men. I didn't believe you could actually win...]

...

The war in Iron Peak had shocked the world!

News spread fast in the entire Land of Han-Yang like pestilence.

Countless carrier falcon flew out everywhere!

Capital of the Kingdom of Chen.

Chen-Xing City.

Zuo Wuji had been through some seriously tough days.

As long as he showed up, no matter where he was, people looked at him with hatred in the eyes.

Everybody wanted to boil him, roast him, or burn him viciously!

"You bastard! You can recommend so many people, yet you recommended that f*cking bodacious foppish prick!"

"My son is dead! How can you still be alive? Give me back my son!"

"You give me back my grandson!"

"So many people died! Why haven't you yet?"

"Your majesty, Zuo Wuji is utterly vile. He brings calamity to the kingdom and the people. I suggest we put him to death by dismembering his body..."

"Your majesty, Zuo Wuji's contempt of imperial power leads to the fact that recommended his friend. He must have received a bribe from Ye Xiao..."

"Hmmm. Zuo Wuji said he could win the war! It turns out he has been hiding behind the wall!"

"Anybody can do that! How does that indicate him as a good commander?"

"He is nothing but a young and stupid young lord. How could he defeat Wenren Jianyin? Zuo Wuji, you are betraying our kingdom! You are making fun of the court!"

"We will never let this go..."

...

Since Ye Xiao left the city, Zuo Wuji was sinking in such speeches. He was surrounded.

He was like a rat on the street, that everybody wanted him dead.

No. They not just wanted him dead, they wanted to kill him themselves, by any merciless and brutal ways... They had thought

about all cruel execution methods!

If the king hadn't been protecting him all these days, he would have died for hundreds of times, in miserable ways!

Everyday, before good news came from the front line, Zuo Wuji would be living in hell.

After the court, he hid behind Prime Minister Zuo. Otherwise, he would have been missing for countless times...

The officials couldn't blame the king for their sons, so they chose Zuo Wuji to vent their grudge.

Zuo Wuji prayed everyday. [For fxck's sake, Xiao Xiao. Give us a victory already. Even gods feel sorry for what I am getting through...]

Maybe Ye Xiao heard him, or maybe gods did something for him, news about victory came all of a sudden.

It arrived when they were on court.

Zuo Wuji stayed in a side, trying to be ignored. He had been bullied so badly that he was just like a trembling duck, enduring hostility from everywhere. Everyday he tried to get away from the crowd...

"Report!"

Finally.

"Great victory from Iron Peak!"

Five simple words shut up all the officials' mouths thoroughly.

"Victory from Iron Peak?" The king was thrilled. "Go on!"

"Iron Peak... the Kingdom of Lan-Feng made an enormous fire attack... and the Kingdom of Chen is blessed. Extreme cold arrived and put out the fire... Ye Xiao, Commander Ye, led the army out for a big fight. Seven full days, they didn't rest a bit. As they kept chasing the losing enemies, they had reached Sky Nerve City by

now... Eight thousand miles lands have been taken back. Other than that, we get more land that belonged to the enemy... At this time, our great army is settled around the city..."

- Boom! -

It was like a bomb exploding in everybody's heart in the court.

They kept whispering to each other.

None of them believed their ears!

The king was so excited that he suddenly stood up from the throne. He grabbed the report and read it again. At the end, he raised up his head and laughed out loud.

"Ye Xiao did not fail me! Luckily, I have ignored all your objections and assigned him as the commander! Now, look at what he has achieved! He swept our biggest enemy there! I am glad! God bless the Kingdom of Chen! God bless us indeed!"

The king was lost in joy.

He forgot to be careful on talking.

Zuo Wuji lowered his head and felt so good about it. [Finally, your majesty! You admit it! You are the one who wants Ye Xiao to be the commander...]

As expected, the crowd didn't burst in happiness and cheers. They just lazily repeated, 'Almighty your majesty!'... That was all.

The officials didn't look happy at all.

[So... the king wanted Ye Xiao to be the commander...]

[Zuo Wuji... is just a scapegoat?]

[Then... did the king give Ye Xiao a permission, or an order to kill our sons back then?]

[He must have done so. Otherwise, how would Ye Xiao act so bodacious?]

[How would he dare to offend us all at the same time?]

[But...]

However, as they had been attacking Zuo Wuji in recent days, the king knew it. The king felt like he was the one being attacked...

Nobody knew what to do now.

The north was in peace because Ye Nantian killed out all enemies there.

The west was taken back, as Ye Xiao defeated the enemy there. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng should behave for the coming few years before they could recover.

...

Chapter 723: Peerless!

The south and the east were going well.

Su Dingguo held his ground against Zhan Qianshan in the east. As long as he didn't do any stupid mistakes, the east would surely be fine.

General Lan was protecting the south. The fallen mountain was a natural shield, and Yang Wanli, the vice-commander leading the army for the Kingdom of Tian-Yu, had no way to deal with him. It was also safe in the south!

In other words, the Kingdom of Chen was free from dangers!

The next moment, as the king thought, it should now be the time sweep out the discord inside the kingdom...

Will I be hit? All officials asked the same question.

[Maybe we did a bit too much on this?]

They started to feel terrified.

"Zuo Wuji recommended Ye Xiao to the court. He should be rewarded..."

The king was so happy. He immediately promoted Zuo Wuji three steps. Surely, Zuo Wuji was grateful.

"Commander Ye, Ye Xiao stepped out to protect our kingdom and saved us from collapsing. He saved us and our people. He takes the great credit! I will confer title of..." The king announced, "... I will give him a great award when he returns..."

"One more thing. I want you to have a discussion about it. What should we do to the lands we took back. Any GOOD candidate to go for the errand? Prime Minister Zuo, what do you think?"

The king looked at Prime Minister Zuo first to ask his opinion.

Zuo Wuji had been promoted several steps, but he was still in a

low position. Apparently, he was not qualified enough to go rule an area. However, the king let Prime Minister Zuo recommend somebody, so as to let Zuo Wuji play a role in it.

Prime Minister was experienced and wise. Of course, he knew he should ask for a bright future for his grandson.

This was a great chance to raise his own people under the king's permission. What a fortune!

Prime Minister Zuo started to think carefully. The officials looked at Prime Minister Zuo and Zuo Wuji with jealousy.

[Little prick is going to soar in the sky...]

[What great luck!]

...

In the east.

Zhan Qianshan's face turned dark when he got the report too. After a few seconds of silence, he slapped the report on the table and made a big sound. Then he sat back to the chair without saying anything after.

The generals gathered around to read the report and they were all shocked.

"Iron Peak, Wenren Jianyin suffers massive loss!"

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng had one and a half million people. Only less than three hundred thousand wounded soldiers survived.

Wenren Jianyin spat out blood and passed out. He hadn't woken up even when the report was sent.

The Kingdom of Chen had claimed their lands back. Moreover, their army was aiming for Sky Nerve City!

In other words, the Kingdom of Chen was safe!

What happened next was the movements of Ye Nantian's army. The Northern Army had divided into two groups. One marched

towards the east, while the other to the west.

He sent people to support two sides at the same time!

The battles had been stable since the day the war started, yet both sides had support now. It was impossible that the Kingdom of Chen would lose!

The world had been settled!

Zhan Qianshan was lost in thoughts for a long time before he finally sighed in grief.

"It is done. Things had gone this far. Pass down my words. Retreat! Let's return to our motherland!" Zhan Qianshan made a long sigh. "Such a great opportunity to defeat the Kingdom of Chen. We have missed it. Is it true that god blessed the Kingdom of Chen?"

"We are never going to have another opportunity like this ever. Once the Kingdom of Chen is stable inside, they will expand their territory. That will be the day we start to moan..."

He sighed. "The world is going to be in the hands of the Kingdom of Chen. As long as I am there, we may still keep our kingdom under good protection, even if Ye Nantian comes to attack. But after I die, I am afraid..."

That night, they prepared for retreat.

Zhan Qianshan stood on the top of a mountain while staring at Su Dingguo's camp. He stayed there the whole night.

The night was dark.

Nobody saw the tears on his face. Tears fell down with grief and helplessness...

He had fought for his entire life dreaming for the victory, yet it was impossible now.

Nobody could understand better than him that after this fight, the Kingdom of Chen would be the invincible force in the world!

Its wealth was peerless!

That was a huge amount of money Feng Monarch gave to the Kingdom of Chen. The Kingdom of Chen had been in war in four sides but still didn't use a dime of the treasury.

Till the end of the war, the Kingdom of Chen hadn't used up the money from Feng Monarch.

Two other kingdoms had been at war for a year, but now they failed. Their strength was declined for sure.

What did it mean to them? It was obvious.

One thing was sure—the Kingdom of Chen would start to conquer the entire world after the war in Iron Peak!

It was done!

...

Ye Xiao didn't continue the madness of attacking Sky Nerve City.

Not that he couldn't take it down, he just didn't want to do it. For him, he had done enough by defeating Wenren Jianyin.

The grassland folks were all dead. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng and the Kingdom of Tian-Yu got nothing for such a tough war. Instead, their strength even declined. The Kingdom of Chen only needed to stay peaceful inside, then the world will be under its control sooner or later!

Ye Nantian could finally prepare to leave this world. He didn't need to stay for the promise he made now.

Besides... Ye Xiao found that the soul power was more than he needed in the air. In fact, when they were on the way chasing after Wenren Jianyin's army, he had stopped collecting soul power.

Brother Egg had absorbed enough!

He didn't need to slaughter more for it!

That was why when his men had rested for some time, he showed

up and did something that shocked everybody in both sides.

He gave the order to beat the war drum.

Then his men gathered in formation in front of the city.

They started to shout at the city.

"I ask for a meeting with Princess Chuchu of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, please!" Ye Xiao shouted. That was surprising.

The general didn't dare to show up at all. He just kept the doors shut. The last thing he wanted was to face the attack from the Kingdom of Chen at the moment. When he heard Ye Xiao, he went to Wenren Chuchu at once.

Wenren Chuchu was surprised. [Commander Ye wants to see me? What does he want?]

So she stepped on the top of the wall.

"Commander Ye, you asked for a meeting. May I ask what for?" She looked cold and distant while standing there. However, her eyes were filled with complicated emotions when she looked at Ye Xiao.

...

Chapter 724: For You!

Ye Xiao looked extremely handsome in his white clothes.

He smiled and said, "We are old friends. It has been a long time since we met last time. I kind of miss you. Can I have a conversation with you?"

Wenren Chuchu casually spoke, "Ye Xiao, you and your men from the Kingdom of Chen are in the higher position in the war. However, I don't think you have lots of soldiers. I still have about three hundred thousand men, and that doesn't include the soldiers in this city before we came. Our men are not what you saw one day ago. Once we fight for the second time, do you think you really can win? I will give you a suggestion. Just keep what you have earned now and leave soon! If you push a tiger to a dead end, the tiger is not going to back off anymore, even if there will be damage on both sides! Besides, you and me, we are in opposite sides. What is it that we need to talk about?"

Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "Princess, are you trying to tell me to retreat?"

Wenren Chuchu humphed. "Commander Ye, you are smarter than this. It is your decision to make though. I have no right to make the decision for you!"

Ye Xiao stared at her. He wanted to show a face like he was obsessed to her, but after preparing for a long time, he failed.

After a while, he laughed and spoke in a deep voice, "Since Princess wants me to retreat, I will! For the sake of the relationship between you and me!

"Mountains and rivers are around the world. Princess, we will meet again!"

The next moment, Commander Ye, while riding on his horse, turned around and shouted to his army, "Soldiers! Retreat!"

Such an unexpected, unbelievable and inconceivable order shocked everybody.

People in either side, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng or the Kingdom of Chen, were surprised, including Wenren Chuchu.

Eyeballs of the men both under and on the top of the wall almost dropped to the floor!

[What the hell is wrong with this guy?]

[Crazy?]

[Stupid?]

[Mad?]

[Insane?]

[That mustn't be good!]

[Come on. Your kingdom was invaded and had half of its territory occupied.]

[Now you finally fought it back and seized the absolute advantage. Things are going great on your side. Nothing could threaten you anymore!]

[With everything perfect on your side... you actually backed off because the princess of your enemy threatened you with some stupid suggestions? Nobody would believe what she said. It was simply a joke.]

[And you actually retreat...]

[Holy heavens and hell!]

[Unbelievable.]

Wenren Chuchu was stunned. She asked, "Are you really going to retreat?"

Ye Xiao asked in confusion, "What? Is this supposed to be fake?" He smiled and said, "You have been so thoughtful and caring for me, I should leave for you!"

Wenren Chuchu took a deep breath and smiled. "Thanks, Brother Ye."

Ye Xiao finally successfully showed the obsessed face he tried so hard to make. He stared at her but couldn't feel anything. He rubbed his nose and then left two words. "Take care!"

He didn't feel anything special like he imagined he would... but for the others, he was... showing a deeply soulful expression in his eyes!

That was true love!

To make her laugh, to see her face, to... Commander Ye gave up the chance to conquer the city. He retreated even when he could easily seize a great victory!

All he did, he did it for the pretty girl!

How soulful!

Commander Ye prepared to leave.

Several generals got over to him. "Commander! We are leaving? Commander... Please... This isn't a good time to joke..."

Ye Xiao shouted like thunder strike, "I have promised the Princess. Do you want me to be a dishonorable man? Does my word ever mean anything to you?"

He was acting arrogant and unreasonable at the moment. He was indeed the head of the three lords in town. Now, the generals knew it!

The next moment, he shouted again, "Generals! Retreat! This is an order! We leave right now! Whoever disobey my order, die!"

- Boooooommm... -

The army was moving backward for real.

Meng Chuanshi couldn't believe what he saw or what he heard at all...

[What? Is this really happening?]

[It is like a child's play, isn't it?]

He turned around and looked at Wenren Chuchu. He was adoring to her immediately. He spoke with sobs, "Princess... Thank you... You... You suffered too much..."

Commander Ye left when he could step ahead for the final victory. He had a weird conversation with the princess. In Meng Chuanshi's thought, he believed the princess must have suffered some 'unbearable loss' to make this happen.

What was the 'loss'?

What did she do to make Ye Xiao retreat when he absolutely didn't need to?

Even if this Commander Ye was an affectionate man, he had to be moved by what the princess did!

What did she do exactly... all men in the kingdom, in the world—natural men—could have a good guess on this!

Women might even make the story a much more drastic one. Nobody knew what they would make up for it...

No matter what, the fact was that Commander Ye and his men left after being threatened by Princess Chuchu with some nonsense!

Wenren Chuchu was speechless while looking at the army leaving the city...

After a while, she finally realized what would happen to her. Her face turned dark, darker than the bottom of a burning wok!

Ye Xiao had planned to retreat, yet he did this so as to humiliate Wenren Chuchu!

She didn't want to say anything anymore.

Meng Chuanshi kept making sighs. "Commander Ye seems to be a

good man. I heard that there are some men who love pretty girls more than their kingdom, but I have never seen any. Now I have. There truly is such a wonderful man in the world..."

...

Chapter 725: Peerless Affectionate Guy?

Meng Chuanshi shook his head and sighed. "Commander Ye had put down everything else for the princess... Had he never thought that he might get beheaded by the furious king in the Kingdom of Chen? No! He thought about it! He surely did! How could he not? However, even after he had thought about it, he still did this for you... Princess, his love to you..."

General Meng kept sighing for it until he felt an overwhelming murderous qi towards him.

He looked up and saw the princess staring back at him with cold and vicious eyes...

He quivered. That astonished him.

"Shut up!" Wenren Chuchu gritted with her teeth. Her pretty eyes were full of cold and furious lights.

General Meng was terrified. He hurriedly apologized, "Actually... You don't need to worry, Princess. Commander Ye has done such a contribution to his kingdom. Their king is not going to kill him. That would be damaging his own force after all..."

He actually thought Wenren Chuchu was worrying about Commander Ye's safety...

He felt sorry for her. [He is going to be fine... But... it is never going to end up well between them. After all, they are in two different kingdoms... What a shame... Such wonderful love story...]

Wenren Chuchu showed a cold face and left.

Meng Chenshi was such a fool...

Wenren Chuchu really didn't want to humiliate him.

Otherwise, he would be cursed to death...

...

Wenren Chuchu wanted to be moved by this though. In fact, she wanted Meng Chuanshi's words to be true!

If Ye Xiao really loved her so badly and was willing to give up everything for her, even retreating for her in face of victory, she would feel so happy about it. Instead, she was so mad at him at the moment.

The problem was that... he didn't do it for her really.

He was playing. He just wanted an excuse to retreat!

And he seized the opportunity to humiliate her.

She wanted to throw up!

She knew exactly what he was thinking.

Love? Retreat for her?

B*llshit! Completely b*llshit!

Ye Xiao didn't want to get involved in this fight since the beginning. He just didn't want to waste more time here. His army was exhausted too... All he wanted was an excuse to retreat...

That was why he used Wenren Chuchu. She was being stubborn and said something to threaten him although she knew it wouldn't work. However, he used it and retreated...

Even if she didn't say those words, he would find a way to tell everybody the reason he made up for the retreat... It would end with the same result...

After all, all he wanted was an excuse!

He just seized the opportunity to make himself look like a good man, also dragging Wenren Chuchu down to the mud!

Everybody believed that he retreated for her. That was not the truth, and she knew it!

However, nobody would believe her!

She was furious about it.

When she left the top of the wall, she felt the weirdness in all the soldiers' eyes.

It was so weird that... she couldn't describe it.

She only felt her cheek was burning red. The anger in her chest was rising up. If her anger was to transform into real fire, it would be even bigger than the fire Wenren Jianyin set in Iron Peak. Even Cosmic Hades couldn't put it out!

The only thing she was sure about was that she had become a legend for her kingdom too!

She would be marked in the history forever!

However, she also lost her chasteness...

Ye Xiao completely ruined it!

"Ye Xiao!" When she finally returned to her room, she burst in anger. "You bastard! You! This will not end!"

...

Ye Xiao was in front of the army, heading back to the capital fast.

The soldiers were all following him in silence. The army was cold and scary somehow.

Nobody knew why they had to retreat, but they would still follow the order of their Commander Ye!

Even if Commander Ye truly retreated for the beauty, they would love to do this for their commander!

They would do anything for their commander! They were happy to retreat just because their commander liked that girl!

The victory they took had given Ye Xiao great prestige among this army!

"I mean, kid, you are a freak..." Song Jue shook his head. "I... I truly can't understand this... You don't want to go on the fight, fine. Why do you have to take that as an excuse?"

He, of course, was the only person except Wenren Chuchu and Ye Xiao who knew about the truth!

Ye Xiao humphed. "Uncle Song, don't you think this ended better this way?"

Song Jue was surprised.

It wasn't just about Ye Xiao retreating from the war. It was giving back the small towns that they had conquered back to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. They didn't stop until they reached the first barrier of the Kingdom of Chen, Valley Pass. In Valley Pass, they started to recruit the local people to repair the fortifications.

Commander Ye made the situation return to the time before this war started.

It was a favor he gave to that beautiful princess in others' eyes.

However, for the Kingdom of Chen, those were too much to give.

Commander Ye gave up the lands and the great victory for a beauty. What a great romance story. He was indeed an amorous lord!

Commander, oh, commander!

He didn't even fear death for the smile of the beauty!

Before the war, Valley Pass was a territory of the Kingdom of Chen. Outside Valley Pass, it was land of nobody, or it might be indicated as the land of both kingdoms. To the west, it was the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

What Ye Xiao did was to return everything back to the point before the war started, like nothing happened before this.

Bridge was bridge, road was road.

However, the loss of the world this war caused was enormous.

Manpower, money, resources... a lot had been wasted. The Kingdom of Chen was fine, because it won the war and it had the

support from Feng Monarch. The other two kingdoms was retrograded ten years. The north grassland was the worst. Grassland folk was extinct. In hundreds of years, even thousands of years, the Grassland Tribes wouldn't rise again!

For Ye Xiao, none of these mattered. After all was said and done, he just disappeared. Nobody knew where he had gone.

...

Chapter 726: A Great Disturbance!

"Do everything it requires to repair the fortification! Make sure it is firmly done!"

That was the last order Commander Ye gave before he left.

To defend, not to attack.

"You guys, take good use of the last few days. Improve yourself. There is not much time before the day comes." That was what Ye Xiao said to Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, and Liu Changjun before he left.

Ye Xiao didn't even bring the assassins of Ling-Bao Hall with him!

Even Song Jue had no idea where he had gone.

Commander Ye suddenly retreated when he was winning it, like making a joke. That stirred up a great disturbance. The world was shocked!

The world was just shocked by how Commander Ye led his much smaller army to win the battle against Wenren Jianyin's million troops—that was such a legend—but not long after, the world was shocked again by how Commander Ye gave up the opportunity to seize a bigger victory for the beauty he loved.

People in the Land of Han-Yang finally had something to talk about for a long time.

"Awesome! That guy is brilliant!"

"That's right! Ye Xiao! For the beauty, he abandons the kingdom..."

"He actually abandoned his own life for her..."

"That's true..."

"That is treason. I don't really understand what he was

thinking..."

...

However, in women's thoughts, it was a much better story.

"If there is any man who... who can do such a thing for me... I... I will give up everything else for him!"

Nearly all women in the Land of Han-Yang dreamed about it. They were so jealous about Wenren Chuchu.

"I really want to see how beautiful that Princess Chuchu is. How did she make Commander Ye do that for her..."

"Commander Ye is... truly a spoony..."

"I want to see this legendary man so badly..."

...

Unlike the civilians... officials in the capital finally had a reason to attack Ye Xiao. Apparently, they thought it was a good chance to avenge their dead sons.

They jumped up and down, raging up with anger.

"Your majesty, Ye Xiao committed treason! He betrayed the kingdom!"

"Ye Xiao gave up the battle! He should be punished!"

"Ye Xiao is in love with the enemy! He gave up on his kingdom for her! He deserves to die!"

"Ye Xiao must have been bribed by the Kingdom of Lan-Feng! He obviously is working for the Kingdom of Lan-Feng! We must execute him as soon as possible before it is too late!"

...

Reasonable or not, they didn't care. They just kept handing in reports trying to get Ye Xiao killed. They just added as many accusations as they could, no matter how dumb it was, to impeach Ye Xiao!

It was a mess on court. The officials were accusing Ye Xiao at the same time.

Hundreds of officials kneeled on the floor and declared not to get up until the king sentenced Ye Xiao to death!

Somebody even cried with tears and moaned.

The king looked at the officials with a gloomy face. Nobody knew what he was thinking at the moment...

Zuo Wuji finally stepped out. It was the first time he spoke on his own initiative on the court.

"B*llshit! You guys keep making up different reasons, no matter how unreasonable they are, just to have Commander Ye sentenced! You fail the people, and you fail all soldiers who had been fighting in the front line!"

The first word he said had already pissed off the officials.

"Zuo Wuji, you and Ye Xiao, you are jackals of the same lair!" A few officials stared at Zuo Wuji furiously. "We knew you would stand up for him! You traitors! You deserve to die!"

Zuo Wuji didn't panic. He loudly shouted, "Your majesty, I have more words to say, please."

"Go ahead," the king answered.

Zuo Wuji looked both aggrieved and angry. "When our kingdom is in great danger, Commander Ye accepted the assignment and led one hundred thousand men to Iron Peak without pausing. There were only eighty thousand wounded men left in Iron Peak back then. Most optimistically evaluated, he had no more than one hundred and eighty thousand men to command! What about the Kingdom of Lan-Feng? One and a half million men!

"He led only one hundred and eighty thousand men to fight against one and a half million enemies! What a horrible situation! Who dares to lead such a fight? Commander Ye did! He devoted

himself for the kingdom. What brought us the victory is his wisdom and courage! He pushed the enemies out of our territory! We all knew it was his own credit! He did it for the kingdom! I don't think I need to remind you all of that!

"Commander Ye put his life in risk so as to protect the kingdom!

"And what are you trying to say here is that he betrayed the king? He betrayed the kingdom? Pah! The moment when he put his own life in risk and marched out for that fight, we were already in a deadly failure! If he wants the kingdom to collapse, why would he risk himself to fight the war?

"And you accused him for giving up in the battle? Pah! You know who have given up on the kingdom a long time ago? Your stupid f*cking sons! A bunch of cowards! Let me remind you how they finally joined the last army when nobody else were available!

"They were fxcking cowards, so they didn't dare to follow Commander Ye's orders! They didn't want to die! They deserved to die!

"Listen to yourselves. All those that you made up on Commander Ye, aren't they absurd? Ridiculous! Pah! He betrayed the kingdom? He was bribed? Do you think he is as f*cking stupid as you, old f*ckers?

"Why wouldn't he betray us when he marched for the battle? Why wouldn't he surrender when he faced the great army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng in Iron Peak? Why would he betray us when he had beaten the sh*t out of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng? Are you really that stupid or your heads are all filled with f*cking grasses? Can't you just think about it? Even though you want to make up something to set him up, please make some good ones!

"There is one thing that seems a little reasonable among all your f*cking ridiculous accusations. He gave up the opportunity to damage the enemy. Is it really his fault? The Kingdom of Lan-Feng lost in the war. They are in a sh*tty situation now. What about our

men? Commander Ye led them to victory, but we paid a great deal to win that battle!

"One hundred and eighty thousand men fought against over one million! We won that battle in an incredible way! It was a f*cking miracle! How many of our men do you think survived that fight? Tell me, were they available for another attack?

"Let's say there were fifty thousand men who still lived. That should be a great luck! Fifty thousand men alive, including wounded ones.

"Our king has fought in battles before. Your majesty, you know how much loss we should have been suffered after that fight.

"Commander Ye kept chasing the enemy for seven full days. He conquered the lands we lost before and took down several towns of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng too! He led our men to the Sky Nerve City at the end. Seven days! They didn't rest at all. How many men do you think we had that could still start a fight?"

...

Chapter 727: Counterattack of Wuji!

"Under that situation, even though we won that fight and we were overwhelming, if you want Commander Ye to continue the invasion and expand the territory, to conquer the Sky Nerve City forcibly... then you are asking a hell more than you should. That is pushing our hero to death frankly!

"The Princess of Lan-Feng, Wenren Chuchu, wasn't being honest when she tried to threaten our men, but it doesn't mean what she said was unreasonable. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng didn't dare to go on fighting. That's for sure. But if they had to go on fighting, it is a different story."

Zuo Wuji continued, "What happened is that Commander Ye has led the army deep into the enemy's territory after he won the battle in Iron Peak. Seven full days, he didn't stop or rest. When he retreated, he retreated with an excuse so as to shock the enemy! To put it in a simpler way, Commander Ye's army had no strength to go on another fight anymore!

"If they fought forcibly, we might lose it again! Just think about it, you bastards. Why would he give up if he had confidence to defeat the enemy one more time after a long way of chasing?

"He has the guts to fight against one million men with only one hundred and eighty thousand soldiers. Would he give up the chance to take more lands and build more credits for himself? Isn't it an obvious truth in front of us?

"If Commander Ye gives up the opportunity to contribute more, then he should have a reason to give up. His army was in a terrible situation! It looked strong, but in fact, it was weak!

"We should thank Wenren Chuchu. What she said gave our men a reason to retreat! That put a wonderful end to our great victory in this war!"

Zuo Wuji gave an impassioned speech to indicate the undeniable truth. Some officials even nodded to agree. Even the king admired it.

The king had fought in wars, so he knew Zuo Wuji was telling the truth.

"Long story short, what was between that princess and Commander Ye is just an excuse to retreat." Zuo Wuji sneered. "I strongly give some of you kind advices, that you should better stop sticking on this topic now. Our king is a wise man. You are only going to get yourselves humiliated!"

One of the senior officials humphed and said, "Lord Zuo, your opinion is unreasonably generalized. If Commander Ye's army was unable to fight anyone, why would he not report it? The report from the battle only flaunts about his great contribution. Isn't that deceit?"

"Commander Ye didn't dare to report." Zuo Wuji humphed coldly. He looked at that senior official with sharp eyes. "No matter how good he is, he is only a human being. He is not a god. He can't be invincible. Since the day he became the commander of his army, he kept fighting a hopeless fight with limited men. The only supply he had was what he took when the army left the city. When the king urged you guys to give him more supply, some of you stopped it! Let me ask you something. Who committed deceit now?"

"So many men here want Commander Ye to die, even though we all know he has been fighting for the kingdom! You want him to show his back to people like you? How could he? How could he tell the truth that his army was exhausted to guys like you? How could he know whether there are rats from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng among you?"

"What if there is a rat here? Let's say there is no rat from the enemy's side. Look at you? How badly do you want him to die? If you have the opportunity to leak the message to the enemy and let

our hero die in the battle, do you really want him believe that you won't do it? Would he put his men's lives in risk? That's deceit to the king? That is your excuse?"

Zuo Wuji truly had a sharp tongue. He talked in a rude way, but nobody dared to stop him!

On the throne, the king was showing a gloomy face.

"If you can give him enough supplies, maybe he could take that city down and conquer half of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, because he is such a great commander! What he has achieved by now has already shocked the entire world! That is a historical victory he made! However, he is helpless! He had to stop marching forward! He had to retreat while it was such a great opportunity to get deeper into the enemy's land! Remember this! It is not Commander Ye's fault! It is yours!"

Zuo Wuji shouted loudly with fury, "You motherf*ckers betrayed our hero and betrayed our kingdom for your own interests!

"Your f*cking useless sons hid in the city till the last day, staying in the royal guards because of what you arranged! Because they didn't want to sacrifice in the battle, they disobeyed the order from their commander! They deserved to be slaughtered! You have a grudge on Commander Ye, so you did every dirty thing you can to try get him killed in the battle, even the soldiers with him!

"For all the days he has been fighting there, have you ever sent one man to help them? No! No matter how the king urged you to help, you just kept holding it! You gave Commander Ye nothing! Not even a small bag of rice! Am I right?

"What about the salary for the soldiers? Have you paid them? Don't tell me the b*llshit about how we are in a tough time. It is difficult to supply them food, fine. What about money? The last thing we are short for is money! Did you ever pay them a dime? No! Not at all, you bunch of pricks!

"You did every dirty thing you can to put our hero to death, even though he has been fighting for our kingdom, even though he is the last hope we have! How could he report the truth? Even if he didn't fear death himself, what about the soldiers who had been fighting in the front line?"

Zuo Wuji's eyes were red, and his voice became hoarse. With that hoarse voice, his speech was so thrilling and impassioned. The court was in silence. Nobody dared to deny it.

Finally, one senior official started to talk. "The kingdom has been at war for several years. We have been fighting in four sides, and it consumed a lot of our resources. Our treasury is running to the bottom. We don't have more food for them. We have lots of money, that's true, but there is no food to buy. Even though we wanted to send them food, we have nothing to give them... How can you accuse us for it?"

"Impudence!"

It wasn't Zuo Wuji this time, but instead it was the king himself. He finally couldn't endure it anymore. He slapped hard on the table and stood up. He pointed at that official and shouted, "Cheng Ziqi, that is f*cking b*llshit you said there!"

The officials were all terrified.

...

Chapter 728: Purge!

What Zuo Wuji said was already vulgar to speak in the court, yet the king actually shouted out dirty words himself.

Apparently, he was extremely furious.

"B*llshit! When the war began, our treasury was short indeed, but Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall has devoted dozens of billion money! We have purchased tons of food, medicines and other materials. We have been winning in the south and fighting equal in the other sides. We never over consumed anything in this war. Why the hell do you think our treasury is empty? Our treasury is full!"

"We just don't have enough soldiers. Otherwise, we could have built another army and fought another war with the money we have!" The king gasped and showed his fierce eyes. "You bunch of sh*ts just stay up high in your positions enjoying your f*cking stupid lives, so how dare you try to frame our hero! The kingdom gives you the authority, yet you did things like that! How dare you still talk with big mouth in front of me?"

"Do you think I am truly that stupid?"

The king shouted so loud. Even his eyes turned red because of anger.

It was silent!

Hundreds of officials were shaking!

Only Zuo Wuji was standing straight up as he loudly spoke, "Your majesty, I have a report!"

The king swayed his sleeve and said, "Go ahead!"

"I, here, officially impeach Cheng Ziqi, Kong Yujin, Zhao Zifang..."

As he spoke, Prime Minister Zuo was surprised and shocked. He

was panicking as he stared at his grandson.

Zuo Wuji gave two hundred and seventy names in a row!

One hundred and thirty of them were standing right on the court!

[What the hell is he doing? Out of his mind?]

[Impeachment doesn't work like this! How could he impeach so many people at a time!]

"... They abused their power to seek personal gain. They arranged their nephews and sons to get on the higher position, then suppressed the merited men... When the kingdom was in danger, these men kept their own kins in the back and acted arrogant and domineering back in the capital... Why would Commander Ye punish so many men before he left? That is one reason. Those were all the nephews and sons of these useless officials!

"Our kingdom has been in war for so many years. This year, we fought in four sides at the same time. Most of the men in our kingdom have gone to the battle and fought for their kingdoms. These men's younger generations all hid behind the shield of the royal guards. They knew the royal guards would stay beside the king to the last minute!

"Some of them used to be serving the Western Army... Some served the Southern Army...

"They are selfish, they disregard law and discipline, and they suppress the capable men in the court. They are nothing but greedy cowards. Those who died under Commander Ye's command deserved it! These men standing here have never truly thought about how to save the kingdom from the invasion, yet they have been working so well together trying to put Commander Ye to death, even though they knew it was going to put the kingdom into a collapsing end too!

"They held the salary that should be paid to the soldiers. They

held the food and the manpower that could be sent to the battle to support Commander Ye. Commander Ye fought without food and men from us! We could have destroyed the enemy once and for all, yet because of these people, we lost the opportunity... These men, they are all traitors! They are vicious! They disregard the royal authority and they don't care about the lives of our people...

"These conspirators and traitors are contaminating our kingdom! Please, your majesty, hold justice!"

Zuo Wuji knelt on the floor and raised the report in his hands.

Silence. Everything was engulfed by silence.

Everybody was staring at the report in Zuo Wuji's hands. They couldn't even breath.

[Is this guy going to wipe out every official in the court here?]

[Come on! We are not that hostile to each other!]

[We hate Ye Xiao. We did say something vile about you, but it was all because of him! We didn't do anything to you for real, did we? What are you doing here? You want to boil us all up? You want us all dead?]

The king was showing a dark face. He sent the eunuch to take over the report from Zuo Wuji.

"I reckon!" Zuo Wuji loudly spoke, "Now that the enemies are gone, but we still have enemies inside ourselves! To purge our system and bring peace to the world, we should clean out all filthy parts of us from inside. We should bring peace inside us first before we can march out and conquer the rest of the world!"

"This is the day that we build the foundation and start to establish the new rule of the world!"

"What could we do if we don't purge ourselves first!"

"We have to get rid of the rats and worms! We must assure the merited men a fair system!"

His voice was sharp and vibrating.

All officials felt their legs shaking, especially those whose names were put on that list by Zuo Wuji. They felt a bomb was exploding in their heads. They couldn't even stand straight up. Some of them just fell down to the floor.

It was depressing in the court; some officials even felt it hard to breathe.

The king's face was turning darker. He was thinking about it carefully.

His fingers were knocking the arm of the chair as he murmured, "Enemies outside are gone... Enemies are gone... Enemies inside? They are!"

He was sitting there without moving a bit. However, everybody felt that murderous qi spreading from the king! It filled the entire hall of the court!

The king apparently decided to kill.

"Your majesty! Please, Zuo Wuji's words are untrustworthy!" Over a hundred officials kneeled down at the same time, with tears on their faces. "Your majesty, our wise king! Please, you have to hold justice for us. We are not..."

"Shut the f*ck up!" The king's eyes flashed with a cold light.

"Come! Take the officials who were listed in the report. Throw them into prison!"

"Prime Minister Zuo!"

"Yes, your majesty!"

"Grand Tutor!"

"Yes, your majesty!"

...

The king called five names and five old officials stepped out. "You

five, take the case! Investigate on every one of them carefully."

"Yes, your majesty!"

"Zuo Wuji!"

"Yes, your majesty!"

"From now on, you are Vice-Minister of Penalty. You take charge in this case! Do you best!"

"Yes, your majesty!"

A great purge took place inside the Kingdom of Chen like a sudden thunder! It all happened out of expectation!

Before Zuo Wuji made that report, nobody, not even the king or his grandfather, knew that things would end up like this!

The officials had been trying to frame Ye Xiao. That was just one small reason.

They would attack Ye Xiao no matter what happened in the battle. It was somehow understandable.

However, it was not the main reason why the purge would happen.

What made the king furious was the other things Zuo Wuji indicated in the report.

...

Chapter 729: Fury for the Loss of Opportunity!

‘... If you can give him enough supplies, maybe he could take that city down and conquer half of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, because he is such a great commander! What he has achieved by now has already shocked the entire world! That is a historical victory he made! However, he is helpless! He had to stop marching forward! He had to retreat while it was such a great opportunity to get deeper into the enemy’s land! ...’

‘... They held the salary that should be paid to the soldiers. They held the food and the manpower that could be sent to the battle to support Commander Ye. Commander Ye fought without food and men from us! We could have destroyed the enemy once and for all, yet because of these people, we lost the opportunity...’

That was such an unforgivable crime for the king, as he always wanted to conquer the world!

That was unbearable!

There was an opportunity for the Kingdom of Chen to completely destroy an enemy and begin to conquer the world step by step, but now they lost it.

The king was burning with the flame of anger at the moment!

What Zuo Wuji said was definitely true.

Ye Xiao led less than two hundred thousand men and defeated one and a half million with a great victory. He had even taken over half of the territories on both sides!

If he could have two hundred thousand more men to use, half of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng should have been taken over by the Kingdom of Chen!

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng would be completely destroyed.

The Kingdom of Chen had no more soldiers. That was true. However, the last one hundred thousand men Ye Xiao led to the battle had been serving the army for many years. They could still recruit men from the citizens, but the reason they didn't do it was that there was no time for that.

After Ye Xiao arrived in Iron Peak, they had more time for recruitment. They could have provided him two hundred thousand more men. It might be difficult, but it could be done nonetheless. The homeland was falling. There would always be citizens who would serve their kingdom in such a time!

However, after so many days, nobody had even tried to do this. None at all.

The king knew that he wouldn't have another opportunity to destroy his enemies anymore!

Ye Nantian had destroyed the enemy in the north.

There was only one reason why he did such a crazy thing. Ye Nantian was leaving!

Once Ye Nantian left, Ye Xiao and Song Jue would leave too!

The Great General Ye and the new Commander Ye were both going to leave the Kingdom of Chen!

That meant the Kingdom of Chen would be weakened a great deal!

Without Ye Nantian and Ye Xiao, there was only one person in the Kingdom of Chen that could possibly defeat Wenren Jianyin and Zhan Qianshan... Su Dingguo!

General Lan was good, but not as good as these figures!

It would be difficult for the Kingdom of Chen to even protect the kingdom if the two other kingdoms made a joint attack again. To conquer the world would become a foolish dream for the king.

If the Kingdom of Chen provided enough materials and men for

Ye Xiao, he might have already vanished the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

That would be a start of another Great War. Ye Nantian would have to stay till the end of the war...

However, because those officials hated Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao didn't get the men and food he should have gotten...

The war had come to the end.

No! The war was ended!

Ye Xiao had no more men, no more money, no more materials, nothing!

The commander had nothing to continue the fight!

The king thought about the great opportunity that had already been lost... He felt like being stabbed again and again in the heart by an iron dagger. He felt extremely painful in the heart.

He even wanted to swallow those stupid officials to death!

[My great opportunity!]

[The only chance I have to make my dream come true!]

[For the last time, Ye Nantian and his son fought for me...]

The war is going to end, and the Kingdom of Chen won.

It was easy to seize it right now, as the world had returned to peace.

However, it was impossible to start another tough war...

It took ages to build the grudge and start a war!

The king felt pain in his livers because of anger.

The five old men walked out the hall of court, sighing.

"Prime Minister Zuo, your grandson... impressed me." An old man shook his head and said, "That is horrible... the viciousness in him. The report is going to sweep out the entire court."

Another old man didn't seem to agree. "Lord Sun, that is not

exactly true. Don't they deserve to die?"

"Surely they do! Why not!" Lord Sun answered, "However, to kill them at the same time... that is... hasty."

"But how to make the king furious like this if he makes the report in another day?" The other old man said, "The kid was being hasty, but it was a perfect moment to report that. Opportunity leaves and never returns."

"That's right. Timing. That is what matters." Prime Minister Zuo sighed. "But Wuji has done it in quite a haste."

The other old man looked at him and said with jealousy, "Come on, old man. Look at you. You have everything to gloat. Why act like you are worrying... Heavens. I have so many sons and grandsons. None of them is as good as Wuji."

Prime Minister Zuo rubbed his beard and smiled.

The other old man sighed. "What a pity! Wuji is cursed. He can't have kids... Otherwise..."

...

Chapter 730: Grab A Grandson!

"What are you talking about?" Prime Minister Zuo didn't look happy. He looked at that old man and said, "That was long ago. Let me tell you. My Wuji is cured. Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall treats him well and has cured the unspoken disease for him."

As he spoke, he laughed happily. "Just so you know, there is one more thing. Wuji's wife is pregnant. My great grandson is coming soon!"

"What?" The other four old men were all surprised. "Come on, Old Zuo. Are you serious?"

Prime Minister Zuo was so happy, so he swore, "If I lied, I will become an old tortoise!"

"Ahem... Prime Minister... Old Zuo." One of the old men got close to him and said, "We two are old friends. I... Ahem... You remember I have a granddaughter, don't you? She is so pretty. You should look at her pretty eyes. What do you think we make our relation even closer now?"

The other old man got over and said, "Old Zuo... Old Zuo... You have to be careful when it is about the future of your grandson, right? You should be very careful on getting a wife for Wuji. Look. A man with a good wife has a bright life. My third granddaughter... You know her. She is gorgeous. She is so gentle and polite. She can cook! She knows many things actually... I think she is perfect for your family..."

The first old man sneered. "Come on. Stop bragging. Your third granddaughter? She has been riding a huge horse bullying people in the capital. Everybody knows her! Gentle and polite... How could you lie like this? Don't you feel ashamed? As you get older, you become more disingenuous... Old Zuo, you have seen my oldest granddaughter! She is the perfect choice for Wu Ji! What do you say?"

Another old man shouted, "Old Zuo! My granddaughter is the most beautiful girl in the kingdom..."

"B*llshit!"

"You b*llshit!"

"Your granddaughter is way below my granddaughter..."

"Bastard! Your granddaughter is nothing..."

The four old men gritted their teeth while staring at each other as if they were in a battlefield. They were going to start the fight despite of the friendship!

...

Prime Minister laughed so hard that he couldn't even close his mouth. [It is always said that a hundred families fight for one good woman. My good grandson. Four families are fighting for him.] After a while, he spoke to the four old men who had been fighting, "I can't choose all of your granddaughters. I have to be careful. It is Wuji's life after all. I need to think more... Look. You are all so sincere. What about this. You send your granddaughters to my house and let my grandson choose. Then we will make the judgement ourselves and have the best one..."

"F*ck off!" the four old men shouted at the same time.

[Who the hell do you think you are? You want a draft in our granddaughters...]

However, after all the days in the court, these old men all knew Zuo Wuji had great potential.

[Prime Minister's grandson must be great. He is going to be an important figure sooner or later. Look at him. He is already standing stably in the court! Most importantly, his grandfather didn't do anything to help, except just introduced him to the king. That is all.]

[He earned it himself.]

[He stays firm because he is capable!]

[One more thing... Zuo Wuji knows well about the king's thoughts!]

[Observation is the most important thing to be in the court.]

[He actually did so well in it! Who knows how high he will get up to in the future?]

In fact, the old men knew that the king was trying to foster Zuo Wuji! As long as Zuo Wuji didn't do anything stupid, he would become the most powerful official in the kingdom in the future!

He understood the king!

That was the most valuable thing he had!

Who didn't want to be connected to such a man?

The old men all knew clearly about it. They were all old and none of their own kids were well developed. As long as they retired, their clans would collapse for sure.

However, if Zuo Wuji was their son-in-law, or grandson-in-law, they would have the strongest hope!

Everybody wanted such a grandson-in-law!

The five old men didn't get on the work the king assigned them to. Instead, they were talking about having a grandson-in-law.

While they were in a fight, Zuo Wuji was walking over. He was confused. "Senior lords... The king has just assigned us to an enormous job. What should we do? Could you give me some suggestions?"

The old men were satisfied. [Look at him! How sensible! I know I didn't see him wrong. I like you, kid!]

"Well, the king said you are in charge now, right?" An old man said, "We will just follow your lead."

Zuo Wuji smiled bitterly. "The king did say so, but he is a wise

king. He knows I am too young for this. He wants me to learn from you guys. I can see that."

As he said this, even Prime Minister Zuo was satisfied with it. He nodded to praise his grandson.

The other four men were even pleased, so they looked at Zuo Wuji with fever in their eyes.

[Listen to him! What a fantastic saying!]

[No matter in what situation, he talks well. He does have a bright future. I am sure, Zuo Wuji is going to be the most powerful man other than the king in the future! I can see it!]

"Kid, I am talking to your grandson about how close we are when you were just a child. We promised to let you and my granddaughter get marry. Now that you are grown up... I guess we should talk about this seriously..." Lord Sun rubbed his beard and gently spoke.

"Get marry?" Zuo Wuji was stunned.

Of course he was. Since he was a child, he knew his "thing" didn't work. Now that the old man said he was supposed to marry his granddaughter... where did that come from?

"Old bastard! You are a damned liar!" The other three old men cursed, "It is me who made that promise with Prime Minister Zuo!"

The four old men started to fight again. They were all experienced men with endless schemes! None of them were easy to outwit!

...

Chapter 731: A Great Plan!

"Grandpa... that... what... get married?" Zuo Wuji grabbed and asked his grandfather.

Prime Minister Zuo was smiling. "I don't know what's wrong with it! The old bastards want you to be their grandson-in-law... They just made it up I guess... They are all talking nonsense... and also accusing others. Just a bunch of old pricks."

"Ah!" Zuo Wuji was stunned.

He didn't believe anybody would make up something like that.

"Prime Minister Zuo, you are old. You forgot it. I don't blame you. When your son's wife was pregnant, my son's wife was too. You and I, we made a deal..." One of the old officials said, "You may already forget it, but I remember. Look. One should always keep his promise..."

Zuo Wuji felt that this old man was so vile.

What the old man said was 'no matter what you say, this is happening!'

He just stuck to it.

"That is not true! It was me! We made the deal!" Another old man raged up. "It can't be... Old Zuo, did you make the same deal with several families? My heavens..."

Prime Minister Zuo widely opened his eyes and rubbed his beard.

[What the hell is that?]

[Now I am the bad guy here? I have no idea what you are talking about, alright?]

[You actually want to drag me into this?]

[Okay. So I am this easy to bully for you? Is that what you think?]

"You old bastards! Do you even have conscience? Wuji was sick!

You all knew it! Don't forget how you kept your granddaughters covered! You didn't even like it when I went by and ask about your baby granddaughters! You don't want your granddaughter to be seen by me... Now look at you. How dare you lie about this! You disgust me! Pah..."

He raged up in anger for real. That was exactly how Zuo Wuji raged in anger when he was pissed.

Zuo Wuji was speechless about this. He said, "Grandpa, let's just focus on the business... The king is waiting for us. If we don't give him a good answer, he will be pissed so badly. He may even think that we are using his hand to suppress the other officials. That is the worst thing we can get... Look, I don't want to be reckless in marriage. Let's just talk about this someday... I am still young. I have time..."

Prime Minister Zuo calmed down. He nodded. "That's true. I am old. I can't always stay sharp in mind."

The other old guys knew Wuji was right. They just let it go. However, one of them murmured, "That is true. You are still young, but girls are not the same. My granddaughter is not that young. She will be too old after a few years. If your grandfather didn't make that deal with me, maybe my granddaughter has already been married for many years. You are a lucky man to have her, kid..."

Another old man spat on the floor and sneered. "You old bastard... Your granddaughter is seven years old... Too old after a few years? Are you serious? And you said you made the deal with him when your son's wife is pregnant. Tell me, was it seven years ago, or before ten years ago?"

After all, they knew what was the most important thing here, so finally, they shut up and looked at Zuo Wuji.

Apparently, they were waiting to hear what this young man would say.

"Wuji, you made that report and you impeached those men. We want to hear your thoughts first."

Zuo Wuji thought for a while and said, "It could be a big deal this time. There are different ways we can do it. However, I wasn't making that report out of anger or other emotions. I had a plan."

"What is it?"

"Nothing special. The world is going to be united soon!" Zuo Wuji said. "Ye Nantian the Great General has wiped out the grassland folks in the north. The threat in the north is gone."

"Ye Xiao got a great victory in Iron Peak. We took back all the lands we lost. It shocked the world. Wenren Jianyin was in a coma after spitting out blood. He may die any second... He can't lead an army for battle in the coming future. The only commander they have is Yang Wanli. After this war, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng lost over one and a half million men. They should have run out of money too. They don't have a sponsor like Ling-Bao Hall. Things are great on our side."

"The east. The Kingdom of Tian-Yu didn't waste much of their manpower. However, it is a war between kingdoms. It lasted long. Zhan Qianshan wouldn't return to the battle in a few years."

"The Kingdom of Chen, us, we lost the most in the war, however, we still have lots of money! For now, we are the wealthiest kingdom in the world!"

"The union of the world all depends on how we manage to lead it for the next few years."

"Such an important time. Those useless pricks could only damage our kingdom on the court! We don't need them to sit in their positions anymore."

"That is why we need a purge in the kingdom. We need to clean the court. We have to kick those guys out! Only after that could we start to plan the union of the world. I said Ye Xiao couldn't show

his back to those men. Neither could we.

"Once we miss this opportunity, even if we are just one year late, we will be seriously stalked in the way to the great union. We may have to work another dozen years, even hundred years. We may even fail!"

Zuo Wuji continued, "That is why I made that report. I can't let the opportunity slip away."

"Those men may do well when it is a peaceful time. They are capable men, even though they are greedy pricks.

"However, we are going to fight for something great. Those men, they won't help. They would only impede the kingdom. I have to kick them out and make more vacancies for the real capable men.

"Capable men go up, useless men go out. Those who won't give it up for the better ones, we will have to kill them. Everything we do, we should do it for a clean and powerful court. The Kingdom of Chen should conquer the world. Whoever stands in the way, dies!"

Zuo Wuji spoke calmly.

...

Chapter 732: Mainstay!

The five old men were all shocked by what Zuo Wuji said. They all felt like a fire was rising up in their chests!

Suddenly, their blood was boiling! They were thrilled!

The five old men's hearts had long become calm as water in a wasted well!

However, even so, after they heard Wuji's words, they were thrilled!

They never expected Zuo Wuji was actually planning to conquer the entire world!

That bright image of the plan was so profound that even the five of them couldn't think of it, even though they had been in the court for so many years.

"Good!"

The five men spoke the same word at the same time.

They looked at Zuo Wuji, but only in a different way.

Apparently, in the old men's hearts, he was a different person. [I thought we thought high enough of him, yet we were actually underestimating him!]

[He can be a mainstay in the court now, not to mention in the future when he learns more. Give him two years and he will become a legend.]

[He will become a legend that is recorded in the history book. A myth!]

[When people say one man is enough to unite the entire world...]

[They are talking about exactly a man like this young man.]

[This young man is even better than that!]

The five old men all were lost in thought again. [Why didn't I

notice the brilliant point of him? I didn't realize it at all. I actually thought he was just as stupid as the other two young men in the city, the three lords in town as they say!]

[I was completely blind! How could I underestimate him like that?]

[Three lords in town. That's what we usually say. Zuo Wuji has been planning on the union of the entire world. He is working on it now. Lan Langlang is fighting in the battle in the south. He treats the soldiers with kindness, and got great prestige back from them. He is going to be another General Lan, as good as his father...]

[Ye Xiao, the head of the three lords in town, is absolutely incredibly outstanding. He stood out for the kingdom when it is in danger. He led one hundred thousand people and defeated Wenren Jianyin's one and a half million troops! He shocked the world!]

[We kept saying that these three lads were wasted. We thought they were just rotting in the foppish lies!]

[If they were useless, what our sons and grandsons are?]

[Trash? Scums? Crap?]

The old men sighed. They felt embarrassed.

[Damn it. We have lived so many years. We are old. We are wise. At least we thought so. It turns out we are goddamn blind! How come we never think about that?]

[We must have been living like dogs!]

They figured their granddaughters were never going to match with Zuo Wuji.

They sighed and then left for work.

The big purge in the Kingdom of Chen started right after this day.

It was happening like a flashing lightning, fast and overwhelming.

It put down one after another in the city!

That was the day when Zuo Wuji showed his capability in ruling. After all, he was going to become the famous Prime Minister Zuo in the future. In the Kingdom of Chen, he had certain power to express his own opinion now. What happened next was the cooperation of the two most ambitious men, Zuo Wuji and Chen Xuantian, conquering the world.

What they wanted was the same. They hit it off instantly!

After the purge, the kingdom was like a machine rolling up and up to the top!

Whoever dared to stand in their way would be wiped out instantly. No mercy.

The king wouldn't let anybody stop this. Zuo Wuji wouldn't let anybody stop him from climbing up to the top of the system!

The centuries inheritance of the Kingdom of Chen had started from Zuo Wuji's report!

...

On the way back to the Kingdom of Chen from the north.

Ye Nantian was riding fast.

His son had led less than two hundred thousand men to fight against Wenren Jianyin's one and a half million troops. His heart was torn with anxiety!

The moment when he got the news, he gave the order to march towards the west immediately!

At the moment, he had ran over half of the path, yet he was still in anxiety. He wouldn't stop for even one second.

[That little prick. How could he lead an army? Besides, he is fighting the war god, Wenren Jianyin. Even I have no confidence to defeat him!]

[Not to mention the enemy is absolutely outnumbering him.]

Even Ye Nantian himself didn't have the confidence to defeat Wenren Jianyin under such a negative situation. For him, Ye Xiao was just a boy who had never even stepped on the battlefield!

He wished he could instantly return to the capital and grab the king before punching him hard. He badly wanted to ask the king, "What the hell you think you are doing? What the hell do you want? I have been risking my life fighting for you! Now, you actually sent my son to the front line! Don't you have conscience anymore?"

While he was rushing on the way...

"Report from the west!"

A vice-general rushed over with a pigeon in his hand. Apparently, he was so excited that he held that pigeon too hard and that little creature was dead in his hand.

Ye Nantian was surprised. [What... It already ends in the west?]

[Hmm. Not a strange thing though. It has been quite some days after Xiao-Er left the capital. Wenren Jianyin is totally capable enough to break the Iron Peak during these days. Is Xiao-Er okay? Are they all dead?]

He felt so disheartened.

He didn't even bother thinking about a victory, but that's reasonable.

Even though Ye Xiao was smart and strong at some point, he had never fought in a war before. He had never done planning a strategy at war. Even though Song Jue would help him, he was just a warrior. He was not even close to a commander himself.

Besides, they had no more than two hundred thousand men to use including a bunch of wounded men in Iron Peak. Wenren Jianyin had one and a half million. It would only take him one

strike to wipe Ye Xiao's men out!

No matter in any aspects... Ye Xiao was way behind the enemy.

What was worse was that before he left the capital, he killed so many men. Because of that, he had no support from behind!

Basically, everything indicated that Ye Xiao would lose!

...

Chapter 733: Hero Father, Hero Son!

Ye Nantian thought that Ye Xiao must have been defeated.

That was a certain thing for him.

He was lost for a few seconds, and then he calmed down and looked at the vice-general. He spoke with a hoarse voice, "My son... Ye Xiao... Is he alive?"

That was the only thing Ye Nantian wanted at the moment. He wanted to know that his son was still alive.

[He is not a useless boy. Besides, Song Jue should be with him. Maybe he survived?]

For him, Ye Xiao winning the war was nothing but a stupid dream.

"Why would you ask so?" The vice-general looked at Ye Nantian. He was curious why Ye Nantian would ask so.

[This is weird... I have read the report to him just now... Such a thrilling news... Commander Ye got a great victory! Of course he is alive! How could he... die?]

"Hmm?" Ye Nantian was sober now. "What does the report say?"

[Commander didn't hear me?]

Vice-general cleared his throat and said again with excitement, "Report from the west! In Iron Peak, Commander Ye, Ye Xiao, led one hundred and eighty thousand men and fought against Wenren Jianyin's one and a half million troops. What a great victory Commander Ye won! He and our strong army have been chasing after the fleeing enemies to..."

"What? What, what, what?" Ye Nantian couldn't believe it. He shouted to interrupt, "What? We won? Ye Xiao won? Are you kidding?"

"No, Commander! How could I? Congratulations! Hero father,

hero son! Young Commander Ye is truly outstanding..."

The vice-general spoke loudly. It burst the crowd into excitement.

[Commander Ye's son, the other Commander Ye defeated Wenren Jianyin!]

[He won that battle with much less men than Wenren Jianyin!]

[What a miracle!]

[Two great generals in one family, both are historic figures!]

[Every great merit is peerless!]

[Both are legends!]

[Both are myths!]

[Such a glory!]

[How thrilling!]

Ye Nantian didn't hear a word of what the vice-general went on talking. He was lost in thought. He couldn't think of any other things now.

The only feeling he had was joy!

[Xiao Xiao is alive!]

[He won!]

[He defeated Wenren Jianyin with one hundred and eighty thousand men!]

[He defeated the famous general in the world, the War God of Lan-Feng!]

He couldn't believe what he heard, so he grabbed the report and read it himself. He didn't even miss one letter.

After reading it, he became silent.

Suddenly, he shouted loudly to the sky.

His voice got up to the clouds like thunder. And then he just laughed.

However, there were tears in his eyes.

[My dear, did you see that?]

[Our son!]

[He is a grown up man now!]

[He shocks the world, just like his father!]

[I didn't let you down.]

[Your son didn't let you down.]

[Just wait for me. We are going to reunite soon.]

He was thrilled. "Keep moving! However, we can slow it down a bit now. We don't need to hurry now. Hahahaha..."

Commander Ye, who had always been solemn, was actually laughing.

"Congratulations, Commander!"

"Like father like son. The father is Commander Ye, so is the son. You both are Commander Ye!"

"Hahahaha..."

People kept congratulating him. He felt like he was in the way to the extreme happiness now.

He hadn't stopped smiling all the way back from the north. He became so nice and kind all of a sudden.

Even the guards who had been following him for years felt it was surprising.

"How rare! For the first time in so many years, I saw Commander Ye happy like this!"

"This is not rare! We have never seen him laugh like this before!"

After another day.

The report about how Ye Xiao retreated for a beauty arrived too.
When the news arrived, the Northern Army fell into silence.
Everybody knew that was not a good thing!

A field commander might sometimes do things against the king's orders, however, he retreated without reporting in advance. He actually gave back those lands to the enemy.

That was treason. At least it was misconducting!

No matter what, he had committed something serious!

Besides, there was a beautiful girl involved.

The princess of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng!

If the king decided to dig deep on this, Ye Xiao might be condemned with treason.

The penalty would be extinction of the entire family!

[Oh right. It is said that Ye Xiao has killed many younger lads from influential families. That messed up with many people in the court. Those officials hate men of the military. Most of the time, they would win in arguments. After all, they always speak to the king. Now that they have an excuse to put Ye Xiao to death, they would definitely try!]

[This is tough!]

[This is more than just tough!]

Nobody dared to make a sound. They looked troubled, but none had any idea to help!

Ye Nantian was still calm. He was still smiling. He didn't seem worried at all.

"Commander, this is not a good news." A general talked to him in a low voice, "The boy was being reckless on this. Commander, I guess we should figure out a plan to deal with the officials, in case anything happen to our young commander..."

"That's true. Young man is obsessed in love, that is reasonable, but we are still at war... To give up one's country for the beauty..." Another general shook his head. Apparently, he didn't like what Ye Xiao had done. If it wasn't Ye Xiao, he should have cursed him badly.

"What should we do? Those useless pricks in the court are definitely going to stir some sh*t to stain Commander Ye and the young commander. They may even set it up to get the House of Ye wiped out! We have to do something!" a third general said.

"Our young commander truly got guts. He actually led the army back just for a girl. I know it is not a right thing to do, and it is disgraceful, but he truly got guts... Like father like son. It is just... This is not an easy-to-clean mess!"

The generals were talking about it. Everyone was worried.

...

Chapter 734: Dote!

However, Ye Nantian was indifferent. He just said, "Is that truly a wrong decision to make? Xiao-Er is not a man who would be obsessed by beauty! Let me ask you one thing. What if you lead one hundred and eighty thousand wounded men to fight against Wenren Jianyin's one and a half million troops. Tell me. How many men in your army will survive after that fight? How many will survive the seven full day's hunt? Can they still fight? Can they really?"

The generals were silent.

It sounded wordy, but they all understood Ye Nantian.

Wounded men!

Seven full days hunt!

How many survived?

Could they still fight?

Really?

They all knew there wouldn't be any positive answer for these questions!

Ye Xiao positively got through it all to the final question!

What could these generals do if they were the ones who led the army under that situation?

A general thought for a while and then bitterly smiled. "First, none of us could fight against Wenren Jianyin. We would definitely be broken before the fight started, because we don't have faith in it. Not a bit. It is impossible that any of us could defeat Wenren Jianyin. Even if, let's say, we did it... we won. Well... One hundred and eighty thousand men..."

He gritted his teeth and said, "No more than fifty thousand men could make it. Fifty thousand survivors will be a blessing from

heavens! That is the most optimistic result!"

"I reckon at least forty-nine thousand of them should be seriously injured. Maybe all fifty thousand. There may be twenty thousand who are gravely wounded, and thirty thousand men slightly wounded. All in all... six thousand men who can still fight at the end. That would be the luckiest situation we may get..."

"Right. And the one hundred and eighty thousand men have to be elites. All of them. Best of the best."

When he finished, another general sneered. "Six thousand men? Aren't you too optimistic? Why don't you go back to your dream? You missed the seven full days of chasing! For me, five hundred men is the maximum! And you should be grateful if you have hundreds left!"

The other generals thought for a while and then agreed with it.

"According to the report, the number of Ye Xiao's men should be about one hundred and thirty thousand when he eventually defeated Wenren Jianyin." Ye Nantian blandly spoke, "After a tough fight and seven full days chasing, they took back the lands we lost and reached the Sky Nerve City. How many men do you think could still fight? None. The entire army was driven by excitement!"

"If they kept holding there and never retreated, the moment the men in Sky Nerve City came out for a fight, we would lose. Also, we don't have men to guard the lands we conquered. To occupy those towns forcibly would only create more battles we would surely lose!" Ye Nantian blandly spoke.

The generals bitterly smiled.

They knew it was true.

"Under that situation, only ten thousand men could defeat our men once and for all... Young Commander Ye was truly just a paper tiger, which could not stand a strike." One of the generals

bitterly smiled and shook his head.

"Then why keep holding the towns from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng?" Ye Nantian asked.

"They shouldn't."

"Was it wrong to retreat?" Ye Nantian asked.

"Not at all!"

"What he did was to use that princess as an excuse. By doing that, he showed the world that he could still continue fighting, but he just retreated for the princess!"

"Even though people might call him amative and stupid, he didn't show weakness to the enemy. Instead, his army was spirited up." Ye Nantian humphed and said, "It might not sound brave and it might hurt that girl, however, it is the best option! What wrong is it?"

The generals bitterly smiled.

"Commander, of course there is nothing wrong. Every man of the military will know that after your explanation. However, the problem is the officials in the capital. They won't give a sh*t to the reasons. Even if they knew the truth, they would still try everything to frame Ye Xiao..."

"Young Commander Ye has messed with so many men in the court before he left for battle! They would definitely seek for revenge!"

"Young Commander Ye will be accused for sure."

"This is the affairs of the kingdom after all. No matter what, young Commander Ye didn't follow the procedure. That is the truth. Those pricks love holding people's weaker foot. We are honorable men and we are not as good as they are in talking. We can never win in a battle of words. Attacking by words, they are just good at it..."

The generals were worried.

Ye Nantian showed an indifferent expression and humphed. He casually spoke, "So what? Affairs of the kingdom? My son is much more important! He wants to retreat, he retreats! He wants to attack, he attacks! Affairs of the kingdom... it means nothing compared to my son!"

The generals were shocked.

They never thought that Commander Ye would say that. He had just finished talking about the kingdom seriously.

The kingdom became nothing compared to his son...

Ye Nantian was extremely doting on his son!

The generals didn't say a word to respond. However, they were even more worried.

[I guess even if young Commander Ye captures an innocent girl to be his concubine, Commander Ye would still get his back! 'It is an honor that my son captured you! He won't accept an ugly one, will he? He praises you. You should be flattered! ...' He might say so...]

Maybe he truly did.

Ye Nantian spoiled his son so so much anyway!

...

Chapter 735: Obsessed in Cultivation!

The generals all felt lucky. [Young Commander Ye is an outstanding figure. How lucky! If he is a bad guy as the rumor says... he will become a monster in the kingdom being spoiled by his father like this...]

That was true.

Ye Nantian was a hero, yet he spoiled Ye Xiao too much. When Ye Xiao was acting so foppishly as the head of the three lords in town, Ye Nantian still didn't want to discipline him.

In Ye Nantian's heart, he felt sorry for his wife. He loved his son more than his own life, because he was also the son of his wife. He felt guilty for his wife and his son, so he spoiled his son as a remedy.

In his heart, he would rather die instantly than let his son feel wronged.

This was the biggest weakness of Ye Nantian. If Ye Xiao wasn't possessed by Xiao Monarch, he should have become a bodacious prick for real.

No. In fact, if Xiao Monarch didn't possess him, he should have died long ago. If he died, the Kingdom of Chen would collapse for it, even the entire Land of Han-Yang would be destroyed. Ye Nantian's real power was much stronger than the limit of this world. If he raged up in extreme anger, the world would fail to hold the power blasts of Ye Nantian. It might truly be ruined!

That meant Xiao Monarch truly came to this world in the right time. He indirectly saved the Land of Han-Yang!

Ye Nantian was a father who loved his son so deeply. However, it was too heavy that it might ruin everything.

His love was touching, but it was wrong. Once it lost the balance, it would lead to unimaginable disaster.

Chaos? World destruction?

Maybe!

However, whoever had a father like this, no matter what end he would go, he must be happy while he was alive!

...

Ye Xiao was safe. Ye Nantian felt relieved when he knew it. He let his army slow down a bit on the way.

Besides, he had to arrange something, in case somebody in the capital truly was planning to frame his son... He would show them no mercy and kill every single one of them in a vicious way...

...

Ye Xiao had been ignoring everything outside for the past few days. He just kept concentrating in cultivation!

Cosmic Hades had blasted out lots of cold energy that was even more than the time it created that ice mountain.

The fire was put out and the land was covered by ice, but that was just a tiny part of the energy it emitted this time!

When Cosmic Hades made a powerful blast and put an end to the battlefield, Ye Xiao hurriedly put it back to the Space while it was still emitting cold qi. The cold qi suddenly filled up the Space.

Ye Xiao was much stronger now, so he absorbed lots of the cold qi. However, it didn't solve the problem.

There was still a huge amount of cold qi filling in the Space. Luckily, after being tortured... so many times, the Boundless Space could still hold it.

After the war was settled, Ye Xiao couldn't wait getting into the Space to deal with the enormous cold qi.

He was so impatient because in one hand, he needed to take care of the cold qi that was created by the Cosmic Hades, in the other

hand, he wanted to check on Brother Egg.

The reason why he attended this war was because Brother Egg needed lots of soul power. Ye Xiao couldn't collect enough except by absorbing it in the battlefield! He had to collect as much as he could since he couldn't have better quality!

Brother Egg had gotten enough energy. Now, it was in an extremely strange status!

The patterns on its shell seemed changing all the time. There were also colorful glows floating on it.

It seemed there were several stars shining on the shell. It lit up the entire Space and made it colorful and mysterious. Every one hour, there would be a starlight shooting over.

That meant the star pattern was changed again.

One hour after another, the star changed again and again...

Every time after the star image changed, the patterns on the shell would shine so many times. Lots of different animals showed up on the shell and disappeared right away...

Within three days, there were nearly a billion images of different living creatures that showed up on the shell!

Ye Xiao felt that he was in a daze.

[Brother Egg... what a world shocking marvelous creature are you!]

Ye Xiao was more and more looking forward to it!

Brother Egg was just in silence all these days. It didn't absorb any cold qi, or suppress the Cosmic Hades. Ye Xiao had to deal with the cold qi himself.

Facing the blast of the extreme cold qi, Ye Xiao felt it a difficult mission to complete.

However, it was only difficult not impossible. Ye Xiao still needed

a big upgrade before reaching the top of Sky Origin Stage. He needed lots of energy to break through after all.

He was working so hard staying in the Space to digest the cold qi. He didn't even move in the three full days.

When he felt tired, he opened his eyes and looked at Brother Egg. After that, he kept absorbing the energy and digested it...

East-rising Purple Qi had been operating all the time in full power. It transferred the cold qi into his dantian. Yin power and Yang power were both increasing in Ye Xiao. He was getting more and more powerful.

Being pushed by the extreme cold qi, he was improving extremely fast!

He had to be fast, unless he wanted the Wood Space to be ruined again...

Boundless Space was limited in holding the extreme cold qi. Ye Xiao knew it well. In fact, that was why he usually didn't use Cosmic Hades to create cold qi!

...

Chapter 736: Ready to Hatch!

Ye Xiao was happy about the improvement. However, to be pushed in cultivation was so tiring after all. He had had enough.

After a sigh, he continued cultivating.

After three days, a short-time of cultivation, he had improved a lot.

Now, he had officially broken through the peak of Sky Origin Stage and became level one of Spirit Origin Stage. Besides... his martial arts were improved. Both Yin and Yang energies in him were improved. Yin Yang Eye was much powerful, and most importantly, East-rising Purple Qi had improved to the middle phase of the second level.

Ye Xiao calculated the improvement of himself this time.

He had broken through about fifty levels from Human Origin Stage to Spirit Origin Stage. At the end, he finally reached the second level of East-rising Purple Qi.

After working so hard, he entered the middle phase of the second level.

[Is it fast or slow?]

[Wait. Maybe I am focusing on the wrong point. The speed... It is not about time...]

[When I was Earth Origin Stage, I entered the initial phase of the second level. After absorbing so much energy, I am now in the middle phase...]

[That means I will need an incredible amount of spiritual qi to reach level three and level four.]

[Spiritual qi. I need more spiritual qi. The more spiritual qi I have, the faster it improves and the higher it reaches!]

He was in trouble when thinking of it. He truly didn't want to

worry about this.

He was terrified. He nearly lost courage to continue when he thought about it!

After he was reborn, he had met so many things. Boundless Space, countless medical materials, countless treasures, and so many adventures, but after all these, he was only in the current level. It must be tough on the way to the future!

What he could do was to ignore the possibilities in the future and only focus on what he was doing. No matter how tough it would be, he was going to reach the end after all.

No matter what, he had just spent one year and got an achievement so much more than what most people could reach in their entire lives. In his previous life, it took him ten years!

After three days, the cold qi in the Space was greatly reduced. The seven Spaces were fine. The Wood Space could finally handle the invasion of the cold qi. Ye Xiao left the Space and ordered some food and drinks. He ate a lot to recover his strength.

He was exhausted and starving.

After dinner, before anybody could get close to talk to him, he returned to the Space and continued absorbing cold qi again.

The cold qi really hurt the Space. It could be handled, but it still hurt. The sooner it was swept off, the better. Ye Xiao truly had no interests on what was going on outside.

For him, he had done everything he should do for the Kingdom of Chen. He had also done all that he should as contribution to the Land of Han-Yang.

He wouldn't do anything for military, affairs of the kingdom, or any other things for anybody else...

He wouldn't care anymore!

[Just let it be.]

He quit, but it didn't bring any trouble to the kingdom. Everything was almost settled after all. Besides, there was Song Jue in the army, along with the vice-commander and other several generals... They were not stupid. Things wouldn't go wrong...

Commander Ye escaped the duty. That pissed Song Jue off.

[I am here to fight for you. Not to wipe the mess for you!]

However, even if he wanted to talk to Ye Xiao, he couldn't find him.

Time flew by, and nothing happened during the days. Three days passed like a blink.

An official carried the decree for Ye Xiao from the court. The king was going to reward him. Ye Nantian was only three days away.

However, Commander Ye was gone.

If he didn't show up and had a great feast himself that night, the army would have fallen into chaos!

The generals could do nothing but sigh. An irresponsible commander who had been missing all the time, it was such an odd situation they had ever experienced.

...

In the Boundless Space, Ye Xiao stood up and took a long breath with relief.

It seemed a breath in white color. In the cold air, it spurted out like a long piece of cloth and stayed in the air.

After a while, that white piece of cloth finally vanished.

Ye Xiao had finally absorbed all the cold qi from the Cosmic Hades.

Mission completed. Ye Xiao stoop up and stretched himself. His bones were making cracking sound.

"It's good. Six days. I have gotten a lot. East-rising Purple Qi is in the last phase of the second level. I am in level three of Spirit Origin Stage now!"

"The spiritual qi I stored for Yin Yang Eyes should be enough for me to use for a long time before I feel sour in the eyes..."

He stepped ahead and got close to Brother Egg. He murmured, "Brother Egg, come on... Why are you still..."

Before he finished, he was shocked.

He opened his eyes widely. On the shell, there was no starlight anymore. The images of the living creatures were gone, like there had never been such things.

It was just like an ordinary egg, except in a giant size!

The eggshell was white. It just stayed there silently.

The eggshell was a bit transparent. It could be seen an embryo was inside it silently.

It wriggled from time to time.

[Brother Egg! Are you going to hatch? Finally?]

Ye Xiao was thrilled. He wanted to know what kind of marvelous creature it would become after hatching.

From the first day Brother Egg started to absorb spiritual qi to the current moment, Ye Xiao reckoned the amount of spiritual qi should be enough to raise one thousand superior cultivators who were exactly as powerful as Xiao Monarch in his previous life!

...

Chapter 737: Primal Creature!

Brother Egg had swallowed lots of soul power. There was the soul of Gu Jinlong and millions of normal souls!

Besides, it had coincidentally absorbed the Ancient Natural Power.

That was the most precious energy in the world.

Even Xiao Monarch, a knowledgeable Dao Origin Stage cultivator, didn't know what kind of animal had such a horrible need! It had to be something peerless and powerful in the universe since it requested those incredible things all the time...

A massive amount of energy, endless spiritual qi... that was even enough to hatch over one thousand dragons!

However, he didn't dare to touch Brother Egg. That would be reckless. Even though he claimed himself the owner of Brother Egg, he didn't dare to touch it.

Brother Egg didn't look tough like the time when it smashed somebody to death so badly right now. It was nothing but an ordinary egg!

At least it looked so.

If he touched it and it cracked. That would be such a shame...

"Come on. Why don't you hatch already?" Ye Xiao held his jaw while looking at Brother Egg and asked.

Honestly, he just casually asked it. He didn't expect any answer. After all, Brother Egg didn't look as good as it usually was!

However, at that moment, he felt a mind stream. [Is it... Brother Egg? Asking for help?]

[It is asking for help!]

[Help me hatch...] Brother Egg said with its mind.

Ye Xiao was surprised. [Help you hatch? How? I mean, it can be helped?]

[You want me to crack your shell?]

The next moment, a stream of mind power rushed into his head. He felt a sound bombing inside his head and then a few words showed up in his head.

‘Blood of the conqueror, souls of living beings, ancient natural qi, heart of the dominator; Primal Creature is born!’

Just the words, without further explanation.

[What... What the hell does that mean? Do something!]

Brother Egg kept urging him. Apparently, it wanted to come out so bad.

"Come on, man! What do you mean do something? How do I know what to do?" Ye Xiao freaked out. "Blood of the conqueror, souls of living beings, ancient natural qi, heart of the dominator... They all sound like something really difficult to find. At least their names are telling it! Well... We have the souls of living beings, also the ancient natural qi... but... blood of the conqueror? Heart of the dominator? Come on. Where am I supposed to find them?"

Brother Egg stopped for a while and then talked through the mind connection again.

[It is you... You, you, you, you, you ...] Brother Egg was enlighten.

[Come one. That blood and that heart... It is you! How would I be here if it wasn't for you?]

[Me? It's me? I have that blood and that heart?] Ye Xiao was surprised.

[So I am the conqueror and the dominator?]

Ye Xiao always thought highly of himself, but not so much yet.

[I... When did I become the conqueror and the dominator now?]

[Who told you so?]

[How come even I don't know it? Shouldn't I be informed?]

Brother Egg was apparently in a rush. It kept urging him. [I am going to die in here if you keep taking and talking like that...]

[But, how?] Ye Xiao was troubled.

[Look. Do what I tell you to...]

And then Brother Egg put the idea into his mind. Ye Xiao thought it over and then took a deep breath. He stepped close to Brother Egg and operated his spiritual qi. Suddenly, his face turned all red! - Puff! - He spat out blood and it splashed on Brother Egg.

That was some blood from inside his heart.

When the blood touched the shell of Brother Egg, it disappeared.

At the same time, blood streaks appeared all over the shell all of a sudden.

Ye Xiao wasn't surprised. He hurriedly cut his finger with the fingernail and forced the blood to come out. He was staining the egg with his own blood...

He stained every inch of the shell.

When he finished staining it entirely, he had a magical feeling rushing into his head. He shouted in a deep voice, "As the conqueror, the dominator, I link my soul to you and stain you with my blood. Ancient natural qi meets the souls of the livings. Hatch, my beloved pet. Spiritual creature of chaos, show yourself!"

"From now on, you will stay beside me to the end of the firmament, share my joy when I conquer the world!"

When he said these, he didn't even know why and how he could say it.

However, he just let it go.

Before he finished talking, his finger shined with some dim glow.

He tapped on the egg shell!

"Come! Primal spirit!"

- Crack! -

The shell cracked into eight pieces.

Those were eight exactly the same pieces. It was like a lotus blossoming.

At the same time, a rolling and raging spiritual qi burst out!

The purple spiritual qi suddenly filled the entire Boundless Space. Ye Xiao even felt it hard to breathe all of a sudden.

That spiritual was so dense that it felt like solid.

That was some wonderful spiritual qi, no matter in quality or quantity. However, Ye Xiao didn't even want to absorb it!

In fact, Ye Xiao nearly lost his breath, not because of the spiritual qi, but because of what happened just now!

It shocked him and made him open his mouth wide. He was surely going to choke if he kept his mouth opened like that!

And what just happened...

In the center of the eight pieces of shell, there was something small, white, furry and wet... A little living thing. It was lying there in a rather lazy posture. Ye Xiao stared at it with his mouth widely opened. The little creature blinked lazily. It didn't even move, like it was totally indifferent. It said hello to Ye Xiao. "... Meow."

Ye Xiao felt like freaking out now!

His eyeballs almost popped out of his eye sockets and exploded in the air.

[What am I looking at there?]

[What the hell is it I am looking at?]

[I... I... I... I... I...]

[I have been expecting it to come... I have made millions of guesses... about what is this primal spirit creature!]

[And it... And it turns out to be... to be a... a... a...]

[A damn cat?]

[An oviparous cat?]

...

Chapter 738: You Are Brother Egg?

Ye Xiao was suddenly speechless!

[God damn it... It really is just a cat. Then why did you have to make it like some grand ceremony?]

Ye Xiao still kept his mouth opened. Apparently, he was totally shocked.

He was disappointed, so disappointed that he was broken!

In the center of the eight pieces of egg shells, that little snowy lazy thing finally stood up with its four claws slowly, like it was the noblest creature in the world. It shook the fur on its body and the water on it suddenly disappeared.

After that, it walked so slowly in a solemn and nobler way to one of the eight pieces of shell. It actually bit on that shell, chewed it, and swallowed it.

It seemed spirited up after eating that shell, so naturally, it finished the rest of it. It was so casual and leisurely.

After that, it moved a few steps to another piece of shell.

- Crack! -

- Crunch... -

Another piece... Another piece again...

That little pieces was as small as a fist, but Brother Egg was quite a big thing, as big as a watermelon! That eight pieces of shell were all times bigger than the little cat, however, it just kept eating the eight of them... It swallowed them all.

That was like a rat eating a whole cow, but nothing happened to its size!

Ye Xiao stood there, totally blank.

[This... this is... the primal spirit creature?]

[A cat?]

It had nothing different to a cat at all, except it was smaller.

Well... there was one big difference though. It was oviparous while cats should be viviparous...

The little cat ate fast. It had already finished all those egg shells. It slightly raised up its head looking at Ye Xiao arrogantly. And then it reached out a snowy claw to clean its whisker. It didn't sound satisfied. "... Meow?"

Ye Xiao looked at the cat, feeling sad.

He looked into its eyes while it was looking back at him. He understood what it wanted to tell. [I am full. Why don't you come and hold me? What are you waiting? Come and hold me in the arms. Take good care of me! Why are you being so dumb?]

Ye Xiao was speechless. Apparently, he got it, but still couldn't believe it. He said, "What do you want?"

The little cat was even annoyed now. It walked directly to Ye Xiao and held Ye Xiao's leg with its claws. It climbed up along the leg and got to his arms, trying to find a spot to lie down. It realized if nothing held it, it would fall down.

It was angry, so it grabbed Ye Xiao's sleeve with one claw and pulled it up. It put his arm under its butt and used its tail to twine on his other arm. Finally, it made a comfortable spot. Then it lied down in an elegant posture.

It blinked and rubbed its whisker... and then... "Meow."

Apparently, it was talking to Ye Xiao. [You should do it like this. Understand? Hold me like this! You have to make it like this to hold me tight!]

Ye Xiao was shaking, and his mouth was twitching. He stared at the little thing and felt so awkward. He was really painful in the heart at the moment.

"My god. What wrong have I done? Why does it have to be this thing? How do I live with this!" he shouted to the sky.

The cat completely ignored him. It just lied there and leaned at Ye Xiao's chest, its tail swinging gently.

Ye Xiao was even upset now.

[What else could it be if it isn't a cat? What is it?]

[Listen to the sound from its throat when it grunts. In the entire universe, only cats make this sound when it is comfortable!]

[My bloody heavens and hell!]

He made a heavy sigh. Finally, he asked with a gloomy face, "Are you Brother Egg? Really?"

When he asked it, he was hoping maybe it wasn't Brother Egg. Obviously, he really didn't want a cat...

However, he was disappointed... The more you expect something, the more you become disappointed if you don't get it. Ye Xiao was utterly disappointed!

The little thing was still ignoring him. It just stayed in his arms, lying there comfortably.

It seemed it didn't hear Ye Xiao, or maybe it just couldn't understand it.

However, it stopped grunting.

Hmmm. Our Brother Cat was annoyed.

[Brother Egg, Brother Egg... That is awful!]

[Can't you think of something better... Stop calling me Brother Egg!]

[You kept calling me that before I hatched. Fine! I forgive you. I am this generous. But now I have shown my magnificence to you, why do you have to keep calling me Brother Egg...]

[Can't you show me some respect?]

"Urh... So you are not Brother Egg? That's great! That was creepy just now!" Ye Xiao murmured, "If it is Brother Egg, it should be able to understand my words. This little cat apparently cannot understand me. It is not Brother Egg. I know Brother Egg wouldn't become such a disappointing thing. Heavens bless me..."

The little cat moved its ear immediately. It scratched its whisker with its claw and its tail was standing straight up like a flag pole.

It was thinking. [What the hell does that mean? Nonsense. What does that mean? Should I try to respond? It is going to make me feel uncomfortable though. Fine. Let me try to tell him the truth...]

Then it raised up its head and weakly said, "... Meow!"

Ye Xiao was disappointed again. "You are Brother Egg?"

"Meow!"

"You really are?"

"Meow!"

He once had hope for it, then he lost hope. He got the hope for the second time after that, but then was disappointed again. It was impossible to describe how he was despairing at the moment! It was just so... bad!

...

Chapter 739: Get A Name?

The little cat answered him twice already. It thought that was generous enough. It didn't have to say anything to this stupid human again. That was too much to ask for it. It then lowered its head and lied down in Ye Xiao's arms again.

It stretched its legs and moved Ye Xiao's arm a little bit, so as to make it a perfect shape as its pillow. It swayed its tail and then curled it and put it on its face.

Before its tail covered its eyes, there was a hint of disdain in it.

[I really don't want to talk to you anymore. You are boring.]

[You are a fool...]

[You asked the same question three times... Moron...]

Ye Xiao totally freaked out!

He murmured, "Heavens... Earth... It actually is the egg! What is going on? What does this mean? What the f*ck! This isn't right... It is just a cat. How can it be the prime spiritual creature? It is just an ordinary cat! Why? What wrong have I done? Why play me like this?"

"Mia..."

The little cat was pissed. It reached out its claw and scratched on Ye Xiao. It stared at Ye Xiao with round opened eyes, looking proud and furious. [How could you look down upon me like that? How dare you? How dare you!]

Ye Xiao raised up his hand and looked at it. His arm should be invulnerable, yet there were three scratch wounds with blood there. He twitched his lips.

[This thing... has sharp claws at least...]

[How can you do this to your master...]

[How dare you!]

[Have you ever recognized yourself as a pet?]

"Fine. It is what it is. There is nothing I can do. Let's just accept it," Ye Xiao said.

He felt that the little thing had a mind connection to him.

It was impossible to... abandon it!

The little cat was looking at him proudly. Ye Xiao loathly spoke, "Duh... Fine. I will adopt you. There is always food for a little cat anyway. I will just take it as charity."

The cat raised up its head and squinted at him. "Meow~ Mia!"

That meant... [You bastard. What did you say? You have made an eternal covenant with me, you prick! How can you still be so picky... Do you think you can just leave me?]

"But... you just scratched me!" Ye Xiao was suddenly furious. "I am your master! How dare you?"

He fiercely looked at the little cat, only to discover that it had covered its face with its tail, curling up and sleeping. [I am asleep. I know nothing about what you say...]

[What is it?]

[Are you escaping this?]

[Oh no. I forgot this prick always holds grudges. He is still too weak to endure a scratch from me. I did that to him... Now it is going nasty...] Little cat was nervous at the moment.

However, it still acted calm and indifferent.

It was so arrogant like it was saying 'I did scratch you. Suck it!'

Ye Xiao gritted his teeth but still couldn't throw it to the floor... It just came out from the egg shell. It should be still weak. He might hurt it badly if he threw it to the floor. After all, he had spent too much to make it hatch!

[Fine. I will think about how to punish you someday later.]

[I am a commander! A young war god in a kingdom! Why do I take offense from a little kitty?]

[I don't need to!]

"I mean... you... Well... So you will be with me for the rest of the days..." When he said so, he sighed.

[I have never f*cking thought that after spending so much on this, I got a cat! The energy I spent on this could make me a superior master cultivator in the upper realm already!]

The little cat raised its tail and showed one of its eyes. It looked at Ye Xiao. "Meeeeeeow..."

[Is he really so stupid... I am the primal spiritual creature... If not for that covenant, will I be with him like this? Does he really think I am such an unceremonious cat? That I would just stay in his arms just like that? Does he think he is qualified to be my mobile flesh bed? He should be goddamn grateful for this!]

[What a moron...]

"Fine. Since you are with me now, as your master, I have to give you a name..." Ye Xiao murmured. In fact, he was observing the little cat.

It was just like a cat, but it was definitely something outstanding.

First, it understood human language when it was just hatched. That was not so incredible though.

It was just hatched, yet it could jump and eat like a one year old cat. That was something...

Besides, it was unbelievably proud and arrogant...

It was totally intelligent.

Ye Xiao murmured that he wanted to give it a name. In fact, he wanted to find out how smart the little cat was...

As expected, it immediately got up when it heard what Ye Xiao said. Its back curled up and reached its front claws forward while the two other claws backward...

That...

It was stretching itself...

[What is it?]

The little cat used one claw to tidy the whisker and then sat on its own tail like a human.

Its two eyes looked arrogant, but somehow it wasn't that confident. It looked into Ye Xiao's eyes.

No matter how arrogant it was, Ye Xiao had the right to give it a name.

It knew clearly about it.

That was why no matter how hard it tried to pretend arrogant and indifferent, it seemed fawning on Ye Xiao...

Name was important!

"Look at you, little tiny thing. Why don't we call you... Sh*t Ball? How's that?" Ye Xiao noticed the cat and found that it was showing weakness to him. He was happy, so he decided to make fun of it.

"Meooooow!" The cat was angry. [What the hell is that!]

"No? Okay. I am a nice guy. Let's change one. Let's make it... Feces Scroll! How's that?" Ye Xiao kept teasing it.

"MEEEEEOOW!" It was furious now as its fur stood up. Its back curled up like a bridge, and it was opening its mouth, showing the tiny sharp teeth and trying to look frightening.

Apparently, it wouldn't accept such a contemptuous name.

...

Chapter 740: Erhuo

[Hmmm...]

The teeth were new, but Ye Xiao didn't feel they were lovely at all. Those were some really sharp teeth!

That sharp cold glow shining at the point of the teeth proved it all!

The cat wasn't just horrible with its claws, also with its teeth!

"What? No? You don't like it?" Ye Xiao asked. Of course, he knew it didn't like it.

The cat stared at its vile master. [Would you like a name like that? Like it? You feces scroll!]

"Not this, not that. Why are you so picky..." Ye Xiao frowned. "You obviously understand what I say, yet you just don't talk. There must be problems on you! Speak! Is it?"

The cat was furious at the moment. It knew he was making fun of it. It just turned around, grabbed its tail and bit it.

[I... I am not going to face this stupid prick.]

"Dog Sh*t! How about that?" Ye Xiao asked.

"MEOW!" That was a no.

[Can't you think of something irrelevant to sh*t and feces!]

"Fine. Let's make it cooler! Dragon Pee! How about it! Huh!" Ye Xiao asked.

"MEOWWWWW!" It burst in anger.

[God damn it! After sh*ts and feces, now you bring pee! Can't you stop being so filthy?]

The cat made a long sound. That was a strong protest. It grabbed Ye Xiao's arm with one claw and bit on it with the sharp teeth. That was fierce.

"Ah oh my god! If you bite me, you are Dog Sh*t from now on!" Ye Xiao threatened!

The cat hesitated. It thought for a while and it figured that it was too difficult to accept such a name, so it let loose of Ye Xiao's arm. It slowly raised its head and made a sound to Ye Xiao in a piteous voice. It actually fondled Ye Xiao's arm with its soft paw as an apology.

It kept rubbing Ye Xiao's arms with its tiny head. It was fawning.

[Please... I don't want that name... Please... I don't want it... Give me a nice one... Please...]

The little cat stared at Ye Xiao with two flattering and watery eyes.

Ye Xiao nearly laughed out loud. A cat trying to flatter him in a human's way... that was... so hilarious.

"Look at you. Flattering your master just after you are born. That is rare. That is so silly." Ye Xiao said. "I am sure you are a silly cat! Now. I have a decision! Your name is Erhuo!"

The cat gritted its teeth. It kept jumping up and down to protest. It swayed its tail and tried to flatter Ye Xiao...

However, Ye Xiao was cold. That was the final decision.

"Erhuo it is! I won't change it!" Ye Xiao threatened it, "If you really want me to change it, I will change it to Dog Sh*t! Just pick one! Dog Sh*t or Erhuo! You make the call!"

That cat was still protesting.

However, the protest failed. It had to pick one among the two options. No negotiation!

After a while, the cat opened its eyes big, staring at Ye Xiao with anger and sorrow. Suddenly, it made a sound 'meow' from deep in its throat... It completely lost hope as it just lowered its head.

It looked extremely weak while lying in Ye Xiao's arms as if it was

sick.

Did it... just give in to it?

It figured it had been tied up with a bad guy.

Ye Xiao felt so good as he won this combat. That was a milestone for him after all. He laughed and then started to tease the little cat in his arms...

However, Erhuo (ahem, let's call it Erhuo from now on) lowered its head like it was dying. It had no reaction to Ye Xiao at all.

[Fine. You give me such a stupid name. I won't talk to you anymore!]

Apparently, Erhuo was rather depressed at the moment.

Its two ears were drooping down.

Ye Xiao grabbed one of its claws and gently rubbed it in order to comfort it. However, it was soft like there was no bone in its body. [Go ahead. No matter what you do, I won't talk to you...]

[I will ignore you.]

Ye Xiao was so happy as he won the combat against his own pet, a snowy little cat. He kept holding it in his arms.

He just felt extremely refreshed.

It was even better than the victory he got with the one hundred thousand men against the one and a half million troops.

[Primal spiritual creature?]

[Humph. Yes, a resounding title. So what? You are just a silly cat in front of me, your master!]

However, Ye Xiao was sure about one thing. This little cat was not something normal.

It was something outstanding in every aspect.

Although it didn't seem to be powerful at all, just like a baby cat,

Ye Xiao knew this was definitely not the real status of it...

What he had seen on it wasn't enough to prove its true capability yet.

It was in the juvenile period after all...

[I will raise it well, and one day, it will be something marvelous in the future!] Ye Xiao believed so!

It was the Primal Spirit of Chaos after all. With such a resounding title, it couldn't be just ordinary!

It smashed a Dao Origin Stage cultivator to death when it was just an egg. It absorbed an unbelievable enormous spiritual qi before it hatched. How could it be some normal useless cat?

Once it grew up... it might become a real primal monster...

That was unknown yet!

However, as he decided to adopt it, he would do his best. One thing must be learned first!

The most important thing was to learn how to feed it!

What should he feed it with?

That was a question!

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and came up with a scheme.

"Guards!"

After a while.

Erhuo was staring at a full plate of steamed bread. It was obviously speechless!

[What is this?]

It raised up its head while looking at Ye Xiao. It felt awkward.

Erhuo was snowy, and the steamed breads were snowy too. Two white snowy things were just the same size. In fact, Erhuo was smaller than that one bread, and there was a pile of snowy

bread...

There was some other difference though. Erhuo had snowy fur, while the bread didn't.

[Wait. Why do you put me and these stupid breads together?]

[You want to tell which of us is snowier?]

...

[1] Erhuo (二货) - (slang) fool dunce foolishly cute person. It was either use Silly as a name or the pinyin, or some other synonyms for the word silly. After asking around, Erhuo was what the other tls also suggested and we also decided on it since nothing else fits. If you guys do have suggestions, we will consider it, but for now and the next few chapters, we will be using Erhuo.

Chapter 741: Unequal Treaty

It was suddenly enlightened. [Oh no. He doesn't, does he?]

[I am a cat. I look exactly like a cat! You fool! Have you ever seen a cat eating steamed bread?] Erhuo really wanted to slap on Ye Xiao's face with the bread.

[Now who is silly?]

[You try to feed a baby cat steamed bread...]

[Only fools will do that.]

"Erhuo!" Ye Xiao called it.

Erhuo didn't answer. It just ignored him.

"Erhuo!" Ye Xiao called it again.

It still ignored him.

Ye Xiao kept calling it, like he was addicted.

"Erhuo!" "Erhuo!" "Erhuo!" "Erhuo!" ...

[I gave you this name. You don't answer me, then I will keep calling.]

[Till you answer me.]

[Let's see who can hold it to the end!]

When Ye Xiao called it for the seventy-ninth time, Erhuo finally raised up its head. It seemed so weak and helpless. "Meow." It replied. It realized Ye Xiao would just keep calling until it answered him!

[Fine. I give up... you moron!]

"Erhuo!" Ye Xiao called it again.

"Meow!" Erhuo answered him.

[Please, don't continue. I am freaking out here...]

"Are you hungry, Erhuo? Steamed bread? Do you want some? You don't eat? Because you are not hungry? Or because you just don't eat bread?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Meow..."

"Come on. Don't just meow. Are you going to eat it or not? You have to tell me. How do I know whether it is right to feed you this? I need to know if you are going to eat it or not... You have to make it clear..."

[My heavens and hell. Why is this guy so nagging? Can't you just calm down for a second!]

"Meow, meow!"

"Hmm. Okay, so you don't eat steamed bread. Do you eat beef?"

"Meow!"

"Lamb?"

"Meow!"

"Pork then?"

"Meow..." Erhuo freaked out.

[I am going mad. I am losing my mind. Why would I follow such a master.]

[My god. Please, strike this man with lightning and put him to death!]

Ye Xiao was excited. "What about horse? You eat horse?"

"Meow!" Erhuo covered its face with its claws. It grabbed its belly and truly didn't know what to say.

[Can't you... say something not meat? Can't you?]

"Donkey?" Ye Xiao was spirited.

"Meow! Ah..."

"My god. Why do you have to be so picky. You don't eat this, you

don't eat that. What do you eat? Human?" Ye Xiao was freaking out.

Erhuo finally couldn't stand it anymore. Suddenly, it stood up like a man. Its eyes were full of disdainfulness like a man glaring at Ye Xiao and spoke, "Idiot! I eat fish! Fish!"

Ye Xiao immediately slapped it and shouted, "You can f*cking talk! Why didn't you talk to me? Meow, meow, meow, my ass! What are you acting?"

Erhuo didn't expect that at all. It was slapped down to the floor and rolled on the floor for several rounds. After a while, its fur all stood straight up.

"Meowwww!" It was furious!

[How dare you hit me!]

While it was going to do something, Ye Xiao slapped it again. "Meow my ass! What? I can't hit you? Why gritting? Playing tough, huh? Can't you just talk? Meow, meow, meow... Who the f*ck will understand that? I am going to change your name to Cat Sh*t, you little shit!"

Erhuo totally raged up in anger. It humphed up and swayed its two front claws in the air. It kept exclaiming. However, Ye Xiao grabbed it on the back of its neck.

It suddenly became like an empty bag, hanging in the air softly. Its four claws were all hanging down, and it was exactly like a prisoner.

That was cat's weak point. Once it was grabbed on the skin on the back of the neck, it would just freeze.

Ye Xiao grabbed it up. Suddenly, it became delicate and touching, instead of fierce. It lowered its head, yet tried to hard to raise its eyes to look at Ye Xiao.

[I was reckless...]

Ye Xiao grabbed it with his hand and shook it. He tapped on its wet little nose with a finger and said, "Meow? Tell me. Will you obey? Will you, huh? How dare you be fierce to your own master, swaying those claws! Bodacious! Do you really want to be Cat Sh*t?"

Erhuo's four legs were weak, hanging down like its head. It could do nothing, as its weak point was grabbed by Ye Xiao. It was now like a salted dry fish hanging in his hand...

Hmm... It thought of salted fish.

It started to dribble...

"Meow... I want fish... I want to eat fish..."

It was crying now.

"Tell me. Will you obey?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Meow..." It was so piteous.

"You will? Or will not?"

"Meow..."

Under Ye Xiao's menace, it made an agreement to him.

It promised to always obey him, to serve him forever, to talk to him by mind connection if it didn't want to talk, and never meow to him!

However, when there were somebody else, it could only meow, not talk!

There were still so many clauses in the agreement... That was an unequal treaty...

Ye Xiao didn't just stop. He kept thinking about it and made it promise whatever he could think about at the moment.

At the end, it even had to promise it would let him eat first when there was something tasty, and let him play first if there was something playful... It actually was forced to promise these...

When Ye Xiao set it free, it felt like dying as it just lied on the floor and didn't move a bit.

[Oh my god...]

[How could anybody on earth be so rude to me?]

[He is so abhorrent...]

Ye Xiao didn't care. He just picked it up and put it in his hand. He kept touching and teasing it. No matter what he did, Erhuo wouldn't raise its head. [I am not answering you! Humph!]

[I have my own dignity!]

It just curled in Ye Xiao's arms, using one of its white claws to rub its whisker. It looked ill, but in fact it was lost in thoughts. [What should I do to take the initiative back?]

[Is it possible?]

[Is it hopeful?]

[Meow... What a trouble...]

...

Chapter 742: Erhuo and Fish!

What it wanted the most was to cancel that agreement!

It felt Ye Xiao putting it to a soft seat cushion.

[Humph. Now you know you should treat me good? I still won't talk to you!]

[You think you can buy me in with petty favors?]

It curled up like a snowball and covered its face with its tail as it started to sleep with anger.

As it breathed, its small soft belly was going up and down slowly...

The next moment, it suddenly smelled something strangely tasty!

That aroused the hunger inside its head!

It just couldn't resist that wonderful smell!

[That is seductive!]

[I am starving.]

As the smell was getting closer and closer, it felt like it was right in front of its face...

Finally, it moved its tail and showed one eye behind it. It half closed its eye and tried to find out what it was. [Why does it smell so good? How?]

As it looked at it, its eyes opened up big!

Even its pupils became a straight line!

[Oh my god!]

[Fish!]

[A living fish!]

[It is just in front of my face... That fresh smell...]

That fish was still struggling...

"Mia!!!" Erhuo made an excited exclamation and rushed over to grab the fish with two claws.

However, it grabbed nothing!

- Shoot! - The fish actually rose up fast. It was Ye Xiao holding the fish tail and pulled it up.

Erhuo got nothing. It was anxious now. It sat on the floor, raised its head, and hungrily stared at the fish.

[I was just born a while ago. I need this...]

Ye Xiao swayed the fish, obviously to tease the cat. As expected, Erhuo subconsciously grabbed the air with its front claws. It looked at Ye Xiao and tried to fawn on him.

Ye Xiao smiled. He knew that he should stop. He wouldn't do it over.

[At least I know this little thing loves fish... This is its weak point.]

[If it dares to disobey me in the future, I know what to do.]

He let loose of the fish and the fish fell off to the ground. Erhuo jumped up and caught that fish in the air. Before it touched the floor, it bit on the back of the fish tight. Its eyes emitted greedy green lights.

A little cat, the size of a fist, bit on a one pound fish tightly. As it got down and stood on the floor, it walked away in an extremely elegant way.

While it was walking, it kept making sounds from its throat.

That was not crying. That was the sound of excitement and hunger.

More than that, it was also a sound of warning. It warned every living beings around not to even think about taking that fish off it.

To take that fish away was to declare war against it!

Surely, it did rub Ye Xiao with its butt to show its gratitude.
[Thanks! Get me more next time!]

Then it casually walked away.

After a while, somewhere dark, there was a sound of an animal swallowing!

Ye Xiao was surprised.

[Well... It seems... What I did so far turns out to get me nothing. This little thing will start to be arrogant when it is happy... It never thinks about its master or anybody else...]

[Little prick!]

After a while, Erhuo was satisfied. It arrogantly walked back, half closing its eyes. While it was walking, it shook its body to get rid of the fish scales. The scales just disappeared.

Its body started to shine in dim glows. After a few seconds, it didn't even have any fishy smell.

It apparently had eaten enough, but not drunk enough. It walked to the cup and reached its head into it. After a few sips of water... it puked out.

It wasn't drinking it! It was rinsing its mouth!

Did that mean it was a neat freak?

After cleaning up, it started to smell itself to make sure it was clean. After that, it walked away a few steps and then jumped into Ye Xiao's arms again.

It was rubbing Ye Xiao in a close and friendly way. [I am coming...]

And then it grabbed his arm and put it under its butt again. It squinted at Ye Xiao and thought, [I taught you how to hold me... How come you still can't do it yourself?]

Then it stretched its legs and wriggled a little, found a comfortable posture, lied its head on Ye Xiao's chest and then closed its eyes.

Its tail swayed over and then covered itself.

What a lovely snowball.

Ye Xiao looked at the little thing in his arms. He couldn't help sighing. [Heavens! Is this a pet of mine? Or... I am just a servant to it?]

However, the next moment, he felt something strange. It seemed the spiritual qi around him started to gather around over him.

It was like all rivers running to the ocean!

And then all of a sudden, he realized the spiritual qi in his Jing and Mai was running. At the same time, the spiritual qi from the world was gathering over to him slowly...

Ye Xiao looked at the little cat in his arms. He was shocked.

It wasn't even moving, yet the spiritual qi in the entire world was driven by it!

It was just a baby. What if it grew up...

What could it do then?

Thinking of this, he touched Erhuo.

Erhuo squinted and then made that grunting sound in the throat again...

Apparently, it was comfortable.

Ye Xiao also felt comfortable. The little thing was soft and cute. Its was clean and snowy, and it felt so good to touch it. Even if it couldn't gather spiritual qi for him, he would love to have such a pet!

He finally had a different thought and started to like this little thing.

As he thought about it, he took a closer look at the little cat. He found that it was actually adorable. When it opened its eyes, they were like two gemstones shining splendidly. It was so cute that Ye Xiao couldn't resist it.

...

Chapter 743: Weird Theft

Suddenly, Ye Xiao had an idea. [If Jun Yinglian, Su Yeyue and the other girls were here, they would surely fall into this little guy's hands right away... Erhuo must be a beauty killer...]

Erhuo must have felt the mind status of Ye Xiao. The grunting sound in its throat was getting louder...

...

The next morning.

Commander Ye finally gathered his generals together for a meeting. When they came over, they were shocked by what they saw.

Commander Ye vigorously and solemnly sat on the chair. Beside him, there was a long sword hanging on the wall. In front of him, there was the Seal of the Commander on the desk and sanders burning. It felt solemn and stately.

What a great general!

However, in his arms, there was a cat lying comfortably...

It was a snowy little cat!

It was not even as big as a human palm. That was a regular cat which seemed newly born.

They couldn't understand why such a little cat would appear in this place, under such a situation!

[What the hell?]

The generals were all shocked. They never knew their Commander was a cat lover... They never knew he was actually so... leisurely!

They blanked out, and none of them said anything. They just didn't know what to say. Ye Xiao knew they were acting weird, but

he didn't care. He knew it was the cat that made them act like that. When he just started to say something, a quartermaster came to meet him.

Ye Xiao was surprised.

The quartermaster was in charge of money and food. It seemed to be something urgent. Something must have gone wrong.

No matter what happened, it wouldn't be a good thing for the army.

"Commander..." The quartermaster was sweating. He seemed in a haze. "There is something strange that happened in the storeroom. It is... so strange. Unbelievable. I can't... I don't know.."

Ye Xiao frowned. "Take it easy. Don't panic. Just tell me what you know."

The quartermaster answered, "Yes."

And then he calmed down a bit.

He said, "After that tough fight, we finally calmed down from excitement. When we calmed down, we started to feel the pain of wounds and exhaustion. Everyone was dispirited. We wanted to give our men more nutritions, but there are barely any good food around this place. We sent some soldiers to collect more materials, and we found a small lake not far from here..."

When the soldiers found the lake, the quartermaster went to check on it. There were many fish in it.

That was so thrilling.

He sent three hundred soldiers to catch all the fish in the lake. Not really all of it though. They took back all those heavier than one pound. They brought back about eight thousand pounds of fish, big and small.

It sounded like a lot of fish, but not really for a camp of so many people. It was impossible to let everybody share the fish. That was

why they decided to cook fish soup so that everybody could at least taste the soup. The cook had been working for three days to make fish soup. The first two days were fine, but the third day, when they were ready to get the fish... They found...

The fish were gone!

Eight thousand pounds of fish divided into three parts. Over two thousand pounds of fish were gone on the third day!

All gone!

Disappeared!

Everything in the storeroom was there, except the fish. Whoever stole the fish did not touch any other things, including gold and silver, medical materials... nothing else. Only the fish were stolen...

More unbelievably...

There left a pile of fish bones in the place where the fish should be.

That was piled up neatly!

Every fish, from head to tail, including the bones on two sides were there. It looked more like all the fish were vanished at the same place except leaving the bones.

No flesh was left.

That was so weird.

"That is so weird... The lock on the door is still good. Whoever stole our fish, he didn't break in. But even if somebody stole the key and got into the storeroom, how did he eat all the fish and leave the bones there so casually? How many people does it take to finish those fish at a time?"

The quartermaster was sweating. "At the very least... I am not being stupid, but... look... to eat the fish so neatly... is simply beyond human capability... I guess whoever ate our fish must be a

real powerful figure. But I can't understand it. If he is such a powerful man, why would he only focus on the fish? Why bother?"

"Maybe... I am thinking... He must be a super powerful figure, who is a crazy fan for eating fish. Otherwise, he wouldn't do such a thing. It is just... I just can't believe there is such a person..." He seemed embarrassed. Apparently, he didn't really believe in what he said.

The generals were shocked.

[What is going on?]

[If he is wrong, then maybe it's a ghost? Isn't it even more difficult to believe!]

They didn't notice that the little cat lazily opened its eyes in Commander Ye's arms. It squinted at the quartermaster and then closed its eyes again. It started to snore...

Suddenly, it made a burp...

Apparently, it had a positive comment about that quartermaster's thought. He was smart. At least, it fully agreed with the term 'powerful figure'!

Ye Xiao was also in a daze. He couldn't think of any possibility. When he was ready to ask the quartermaster some questions, he smelled something fishy from in his arms...

He looked down and saw the little thing burp... It was closing its eyes, lying there as if it had nothing to do with this matter... Its furry tail was moving and shaking slightly...

Apparently, it was really enjoying this. It was even gloating.

...

Chapter 744: Father and Son!

Suddenly, Ye Xiao thought of something. [Traceless? Powerful figure? Fan of eating fish? ... Is it... no way... Erhuo ate all of the fish itself!]

He remembered when Erhuo saw the fish the first day, it looked so thrilled. He figured it was very likely the thief.

The only question was that how did Erhuo eat up all those fish with its tiny body?

Those were eight thousand pounds!

Ye Xiao made up his mind. He tapped Erhuo's back and embarrassedly spoke, "It is not anything serious. The army is still running well. Don't take it too serious... Go. Arrange the cooking."

The quartermaster wanted to say something more, but when he saw Commander Ye's face, he didn't dare to. He left.

[As long as nobody blames me for it!]

Ye Xiao couldn't wait to deal with this, so he just dismissed the generals after a few words.

He said, "You guys know a lot in military affairs. You know what to do. Now we are in peaceful days. There won't be any troubles. Just do whatever you think needs to be done. Just solve the problem among yourselves. No need to ask me."

"You know what to do. Just rule the soldiers. You understand, right?"

"Good. Dismiss."

Song Jue and the generals were confused.

After Commander Ye left, the others were still blank in the head.

[What? After being absent for all these days, now you are finally back. Our commander is finally back. We have so many things to

report to you, discuss with you, solve with you...]

[Now we see you, yet you just left after saying some useless words.]

[We have to swallow the reports we want to make back to our throats.]

[You didn't even give us a chance to speak...]

[What the hell?]

[We do have too many things waiting to be solved, but you are the one in charge here!]

[Can't you just be responsible a bit more!]

...

They were quite annoyed because of it. Zhu Chenggong made a long sigh.

The next day, things turned much better.

The other Commander Ye had arrived with his great cavalry. The leader was exactly Ye Nantian.

Song Jue was so happy to see his brother after all these days. He rushed over and held Ye Nantian tight.

"Where is Ye Xiao?" Ye Nantian looked around but didn't find Ye Xiao, so he asked.

Normally, when a commander of another army came to support, Ye Xiao should greet him in person, let alone it was his father!

Song Jue and Zhu Chenggong were speechless when they heard Ye Nantian.

"Dear brother, your baby son... We have been looking for him like... every second these days..." Song Jue started to complain as he finally got a chance to. "He actually leaves no trace at all... He is just gone..."

"He doesn't care about anything in the camp at all..."

"Big or small... He just doesn't do anything..."

Song Jue and Zhu Chenggong were both so upset. They just seized the chance to vent every bit of the dissatisfaction in their chest.

Ye Nantian looked at them both and discontentedly spoke, "Why is it so damn hopeless here... This is insane. He is a young man. No matter how smart, clever, wise, sensible, brave, and strong-hearted he is, this is after all his first time to rule an army. How can you expect him to know much about dealing with all these matters in the army? Didn't he get through such a big war in the battlefield and find a perfect solution to win the war? That kid must have driven every bit of his strength for that. Now he wants to take some rests. So what? Should he?"

"You two are old enough here. What can't you possibly handle in the army? Is there really any problem you can't solve? And you have to bother my son? You won the fight. The war is over. There is no commander in the army, so what? So you can't live your lives now? Really? Ridiculous! Look at you, two experienced men of the army, acting like kids complaining about Ye Xiao in front of his father. Come on. Grow up. Don't tell anybody you know me. I feel ashamed!"

Song Jue and Zhu Chenggong stared at Ye Nantian. They just felt shocked.

Song Jue was better. He knew how his brother spoiled Ye Xiao after all. Zhu Chenggong saw it for the first time. He waited such a long time just to complain about Ye Xiao in front of Ye Nantian, yet only got himself humiliated.

If Ye Nantian just scolded him, that would be fine. What upset him the most was how Ye Nantian praised his son like that! That was too much!

[What the hell is wrong with this man? I have never seen a father be partial to the son unreasonably! He actually raised his son up to

the heaven like he was so perfect! What the hell?]

[Fine. What you said about your son is true, and yes, we agree that he did a great job, but shouldn't you let others say it instead of boasting about it? Shouldn't you at least pretend to be humble?]

[Oh my god. He is just as weird as his son!]

Ye Nantian stared at him and what he meant wanted to say was obvious. [My son has led you all to the victory of this war. He has done enough. How dare you even think about bothering him with such trivial matters? Don't you feel ashamed?]

[What do you want more...]

Zhu Chenggong felt in a daze all of a sudden.

When Ye Nantian had already left for rest, he was still standing there.

He wanted to give Ye Nantian some advices. [Commander, I understand that you love your son very much, but you really can't just spoil him like this. You will make him a fool, although he is quite good right now...]

[Ye Nantian's son, Ye Xiao. Our young Commander Ye, what a brilliant figure. It seems right to spoil him a bit, but...] He didn't dare to think more of it.

What if Ye Nantian squinted at him and scolded, 'My son won the war, even though I spoil him in the way you don't like. Maybe I should spoil him more, huh?'

Zhu Chenggong felt humiliated.

"Song Jue, I asked you to find out the truth about the block of the tunnel back to Qing-Yun Realm. What do you have now?" Ye Nantian frowned, "Is it true?"

"Yes! Absolutely!" Song Jue was certain.

"That means we have to return to Qing-Yun Realm in two months? If we don't, we will exploded under the power of the sky

and earth? That is bad." Ye Nantian frowned. "But... What about Xiao Xiao?"

Song Jue said, "Don't worry. He is a monster. I truly cannot imagine how you raised him up. He has reached the level to break over the limitation! He can leave with us. Maybe not in the same tunnel with us, but he will leave this world and go to the Qing-Yun Realm."

"What? Are you telling me... Xiao Xiao is strong enough to leave this world?"

...

Chapter 745: Ye Nantian's Worry

Ye Nantian suddenly widely opened his eyes. He stood up and said, "How is that possible? The last time I went home, I did check on his cultivation status. How could he possibly improve so much?"

"Believe it or not, he is this powerful now. I am not lying," Song Jue said.

Ye Nantian didn't feel happy at all. Instead, he looked gloomy.

He stood up and paced around in the tent. Apparently, he was worried.

"He... He doesn't know about that, does he?" Ye Nantian asked.

"Absolutely not. No matter how dumb I am, I would never tell him that. He shouldn't know a thing about it," Song Jue answered.

Ye Nantian made a long sigh. "Good... He is not going to leave with us anyway... Just let him... Just let him focus on his cultivation and wait for his fate... And we will see what then. I wanted him to live a peaceful life, but..."

Then he made a long sigh again.

At the moment, he felt something. Suddenly, he turned over and shouted, "Who is it? Urhh... Xiao Xiao... Why are you here?"

It was exactly Ye Xiao standing behind him.

Ye Xiao felt speechless. "Well... this... this is... my tent..."

Ye Nantian's mouth twisted and he angrily shouted, "You little prick! Can't you just make a sound when you come in."

He was annoyed. Since he entered this place, he checked every corner to make sure nobody else was there! Not to mention a person, he wouldn't allow a fly in the tent!

However, Ye Xiao just showed up from nowhere!

[What the hell is going on?]

"Hmm. Xiao Xiao, you... Did you get in just now?" He was a bit worried. Instead of the silent movement of Ye Xiao, he cared more about whether Ye Xiao heard what he said to Song Jue.

"Yes. Why?" Ye Xiao was confused. [What is wrong? Why are you showing such a sad face?]

"Hmm. Great. Nothing. Nothing serious!" Ye Nantian took a long breath out and said with a smile, "Good boy. You did a great job in the battle. I am proud of you!"

He tapped on Ye Xiao's shoulder and felt comforted.

It had been quite a while since they met. Although Ye Nantian tried to be a strict father, he couldn't hide the softness in his eyes.

The three of them talked about the current situation in the world for a while and then changed the topic. Apparently, none of them truly cared about what future this world had.

Ye Nantian was quite invested with the little cat in Ye Xiao's hands. "Where did you get it? It's adorable!"

Then he wanted to hold it and have a close look. Erhuo quickly turned around and then left fast. Ye Nantian was shocked.

Erhuo thought, [Oh heavens. That is master's father... I can't reject him frankly. But... I hate to be touched by others. I have to get away...]

[That quartermaster said that there is a lake around? And there are fish in the water?]

[Good! Let me go get something to eat!]

And then it disappeared.

"That is a fast moving cat really!" Ye Nantian smiled. In fact, he was still thinking, [Did he hear the conversation earlier?]

At the same time, he was troubled. [If Xiao Xiao goes to Qing-Yun

Realm, he will definitely get to know things about his mother. What would he do... if he knows the truth?]

Ye Nantian had changed the topic already, but still worrying about that.

"Since we all decided to leave, I don't think we have to return to the capital." Ye Nantian said, "But... there are some problems we need to solve."

"What problems?" Song Jue asked.

"You and me, we can both use secret tunnel to go back to Qing-Yun Realm. Xiao Xiao and the others can't. They didn't experience the Ascension Ablution. They can't get into the secret tunnel. The only way they can leave to Qing-Yun Realm is to take the normal way."

Song Jue asked, "That's right. What is the problem then?"

"Naturally, it isn't a problem to take the normal way into Qing-Yun Realm. The problem is that the location they will land in Qing-Yun Realm is uncertain. We won't get to know where Xiao Xiao will get to in advance. It is full of dangers up there. He may get into troubles. We have to be careful."

Ye Nantian frowned.

Song Jue rubbed his head and didn't say anything.

He apparently felt the annoyance in his big brother's mind.

[Qing-Yun Realm is a superior realm. There are always cultivators from low realm arriving. It isn't too dangerous though. As long as they stay careful and don't take any reckless moves, it will be fine!]

[However, Xiao Xiao is different. He isn't the same as the other cultivators after all. Besides, once he gets to know things about his mother, he will definitely do something about it.]

[He reached Spirit Origin Stage when he is so young. That proves

that he is a genius!]

[However, he is nothing compared to those people who have existed for dozens of thousand years!]

[If somebody knows who he is, he will get into huge trouble!]

[They can kill him by just a mind attack!]

[I can go back to Ye Clan, but Ye Xiao can never follow me back.]

[At least not now!]

[But he is powerful enough to get to Qing-Yun Realm. How can I forbid him to go back to his family?]

[It is just... not right!]

[But things will lose control once he gets back. He will get to know everything we have been hiding from him!]

[It will be impossible to hide the truth from him, or to the public.]

Ye Nantian was troubled at the moment.

Song Jue was also helpless.

"Xiao Xiao, well..." Ye Nantian took in a deep breath and spoke in a deep voice, "There is something I have to be frank to you."

Ye Xiao spoke with respect, "Please, father."

"Hmm." Ye Nantian nodded and sighed. "Son, I owe you so much..."

"I never wanted you to do any martial art cultivation at the beginning... I just want you to live a peaceful life. Normal life. That is why I keep spoiling you like this... But... unexpectedly, you actually stepped on the path to cultivation by yourself anyway. Now as we all know, you have achieved a great lot..."

...

Chapter 746: Ascension to Qing-Yun Realm!

Ye Nantian sighed. "There is secret I have too keep, that is why I would do that in the first place... I had to. I can't tell you about the secret yet."

"But I am still going to tell you something..." Ye Nantian's face twisted painfully, "When you go up to Qing-Yun Realm, you can't... you can't return to our clan yet."

"I can't tell you why. Just... I want you to be understanding. When you are out there, you can't tell anybody about your true identity. Once you do... I am afraid... you will get yourself killed."

"You grew up in the Land of Han-Yang. You barely know anything about Qing-Yun Realm. I am invincible in this world, and you are one of the top cultivators in this world. However, you and me, we are probably below the third league in Qing-Yun Realm."

Ye Nantian looked at his son sorrowfully. "I know... this is hard for you... I am making it hard for you... but..."

Ye Xiao took a breath out of relief all of a sudden.

"That is... not a problem." Ye Xiao promised. He didn't even ask why. "I never want to depend on our clan in Qing-Yun Realm anyway. I want to practice by myself in the martial world of Qing-Yun Realm. I have been improving too fast in this world. It took me such a short time to become one of the strongest ones. That is why I still need more experience to improve my mind status. To live in Qing-Yun Realm by myself is what I want. I feel good about it."

Ye Nantian had been such a loving father to Ye Xiao. He would give everything he had to his son if needed.

Ye Xiao had recognized him as his father long ago.

However, to be a member of Ye Nantian's clan was a different story. That meant he had to accept a bunch more relatives,

grandfather, grandmother, uncles, aunts...

That would be utterly embarrassing for Ye Xiao.

[I... I was Xiao Monarch who traveled the world back then!]

[A bunch of weak ants who were far below my league when I was there... and I have to be humble to all of them...]

Ye Xiao had thought about this earlier. He truly didn't know what to do about it.

At the moment, as Ye Nantian told him not to be a member of his clan, that was such a good news for him, so he accepted it without hesitation.

However, that shocked Ye Nantian greatly.

Even though he was shocked, he felt relieved. Then he started to worry about his son's safety. He started to nag and nag, trying to teach Ye Xiao everything he knew about Qing-Yun Realm, including how to deal with people, how to avoid troubles... Nagging and nagging.

Ye Xiao actually knew much more than Ye Nantian, but he just stayed calm and listened humbly. All that he learned back in Qing-Yun Realm, he learned them from fire and blood. Nobody had ever so patiently tried to teach him anything.

At the moment, he had a father, who was truly caring for him and trying to get him away from possible dangers.

He knew everything Ye Nantian was telling him, but he felt warm in the heart because of it. He was touched.

Ye Nantian and Song Jue were doing it together, trying to explain everything to Ye Xiao as possible as they could. They even came up with many questions to ask Ye Xiao. "What would you do? What could possibly happen if that's the case?"

Ye Xiao gave them all the best answers. Ye Nantian felt relieved and told him to do more tests and then he would teach Ye Xiao

more after the tests...

The next day, an official from the Kingdom of Chen finally arrived. He was late.

He announced the decree of the King to urge Ye Xiao return to the capital.

Ye Xiao was indifferent. He said, "Go tell the king that the story between the House of Ye and your Royal House has ended. We won't return to the kingdom anymore. We will leave here and never come back to the Land of Han-Yang."

The official was frightened.

[There has never been any people who dares to respond the king's decree like this.]

[I am looking at three now! Unbelievable!]

Ye Nantian was polite though. "Please tell his majesty that I will never forget what we have been through together. If the fate allows, I will come back to the Kingdom of Chen and visit him. Take care."

The official left and headed back the capital.

He never knew how frustrated the king would be when he knew this...

The next few days, Ye Nantian was busy making arrangements for the soldiers, who were also good friends to Ye Nantian...

He felt the grief of parting.

On the other side, Wenren Chuchu was doing the same thing.

Zhao Pingtian, Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun were also doing the same thing.

The day they left Land of Han-Yang was getting closer...

Ye Xiao sent letters to Lan Langlang, Zuo Wuji and Wan Zhenghao and a few exquisite jade bottles too...

Finally, the day had come.

It was cloudy.

The world seemed to sense something. Wind blew over and lightnings showed among the clouds from time to time...

Ye Nantian stared at the dark clouds in the sky, then he looked at his son, who was waiting for the Ascension Trial on top of the mountain. He had a complicated emotion.

He was worried, sad, caring... all kinds of strong feelings filled his chest.

He had known about the real power of his son. He didn't worry about the trial at all. Ye Xiao could definitely get through it.

What worried him the most was the dangers he would encounter in Qing-Yun Realm.

Those were the real threats. Anywhere and anytime in Qing-Yun Realm would be more dangerous for Ye Xiao than in the Land of Han-Yang.

Precisely speaking, it was much more dangerous up there! Hundreds times dangerous!

He could have been killed in any second!

Nobody could foresee what would happen to them in Qing-Yun Realm. No matter how much he was taught about the rules and experiences in Qing-Yun Realm, they were still just theories.

[Qing-Yun Realm is totally different from the Land of Han-Yang. You may be invincible in the Land of Han-Yang and you get used to being on top of the league, but when you just arrive in Qing-Yun Realm, a thief could be much more powerful than you can imagine.]

Well that was no kidding. Spirit Origin Stage was the bottommost stage in Qing-Yun Realm after all. A Spirit Origin Stage cultivator was just a normal person!

However, Ye Nantian had to let his beloved son live in such a dangerous world all by himself. He knew that it was at least better than returning to the clan.

It was much safer to live alone there, no matter how dangerous it was!

The biggest danger was lying in his clan!

What Ye Nantian said to Ye Xiao most in days was...

"Xiao Xiao, when you arrive in Qing-Yun Realm, the first thing you do is to stay low to the dirt!"

"Do not act like you are a powerful figure even though you truly are one of the strongest in the Land of Han-Yang. You will suffer great loss if you don't stay humble. You may die!"

"There are so many arrogant people, who claimed to be talented, looking down upon the world in Qing-Yun Realm. They failed! In fact, they were all truly talented ones! However, they didn't get well trained and they were weak. At least, they were so weak for the people in Qing-Yun Realm!"

"Those men died in vain glory in a short time!"

"They used to be just like you. They were from different low realms! They used to be the strongest in their worlds! They were all legends in their homeland!"

"However, soon after they got to Qing-Yun Realm, they died. Legends, myths, heroes, it wouldn't make any difference. They are all dead men! Dead men mean nothing!"

"That's why you have to stay humble!"

"The first thing you do is to put yourself in the position of an ant looking upon the giant world. It won't feel good, but it is safe!"

"Just be tolerant! Try your best to hold your temper! Remember it!"

"This is important!"

"You have to keep yourself alive first!"

Ye Nantian had repeated these words again and again, however, now while looking at his son far on top of the mountain, he still wanted to say it to Ye Xiao again.

He even wanted to rush over and grab Ye Xiao off the mountain. [Maybe I should just ruin your cultivation right now and let you live in this world... in a peaceful life.]

There were three men standing there with Ye Xiao.

Ning Biluo.

Zhao Pingtian.

Liu Changjun.

Ye Xiao was speaking casually at the moment. What he was saying was more or less what Ye Nantian told him again and again in the past few days. Ye Xiao knew everything Ye Nantian told him. He even knew better than Ye Nantian. He didn't need any warning at all.

However, Ning Biluo and the other two needed it!

Because they had never been to that cruel world!

...

Chapter 747: Ascension Day!

As Ye Nantian said, every cultivator who had reached Qing-Yun Realm used to be the most powerful cultivators in their original worlds. No matter how experienced and steady they were, they were used to being arrogant and full of pride facing others. When they first went to the new world, they didn't know how unpredictable things could be, so they naturally kept acting in their own paces!

However, for the natives who had been living in Qing-Yun Realm for a long time, they would never endure the annoyance brought by some weak and arrogant featherbrains! That was why for most of those newly arrived people, there was a disaster in front of them!

For example, the son of the head of a township who has been living with respect from everybody around him, so he considers everybody and everything beneath his notice.

However, if this young man goes to Beijing one day and doesn't change his attitude... Ahem.

"One more thing. Even though we will pass the trial together and go to Qing-Yun Realm at the same time, we won't be in the same place when we arrive." Ye Xiao slowly spoke in a deep voice, "It is some kind of trick that fate plays on us, like the heavens hates us to be together... We will be separated. Each of us will have to live the world up there by ourselves. One mistake, and we will never see each other alive again.

"Only when we all survive that world alone will we get the chance to meet each other again.

"In the Land of Han-Yang, we all all superior figures. We travel the world and fear nothing, but you have to realize in Qing-Yun Realm, we are nothing! We are a part of the weakest ones.

"You must know how to survive in a world with stronger people around.

"Whatever happens, we must stay alive and wait for the day of reunion!

"When you go up there, start cultivating the martial arts I gave you." Ye Xiao took a deep breath. "Those are good martial arts... that suits the law in Qing-Yun Realm.

"Remember, stay alive! Wait for the day of reunion!

"I hope that when I see you again, you have become somebody in that cruel world."

The dark clouds were getting lower and lower in the sky. The trial was obviously getting closer.

Wind blew wildly. Big trees with thick trunks that had lived so many years were actually bended by the wind. Endless tree branches cracked off the trunks and whirled up to the sky and then disappeared...

The four of them stood there, with their clothes waving in the wind. They looked solemn.

"Let me tell you some good news then. It is called Ascension Trial only in this world. In fact, it is more than just a trial." Ye Xiao said, "In Qing-Yun Realm, they call this Body Refinement, also known as 'Mortal Separation'!

"Literally, it refines our bodies and makes us capable of living under the suppression from the time and space in Qing-Yun Realm. That means this is not only a challenge, but also an opportunity!

"However, when we get pass it and get improved, we still have to be careful. It is just a beginning, not a skyrocketing rise! Remember."

While he was slowly speaking, the other three were wholeheartedly listening. They wanted to remember every single

word from Ye Xiao.

As the clouds got lower, they could almost reach it.

Time flew by.

"Ning Biluo, the people you care for, they are well settled. Don't worry.

"Zhao Pingtian, keep that space ring I gave you earlier. There are many things that Rou-Er needs in it. Even if you can't find me, that should be enough for her in a hundred years.

"Liu Changjun! If you want to follow me, you should keep cultivating like a possessed madman!

"Let us meet in Qing-Yun Realm. I hope we won't disappoint each other when we meet again there!"

When he finished talking, a terrifying light cyan lightning cracked the sky in the dark clouds, striking down to the four of them.

Under the mountain, Ye Nantian was agitated. "Here it is!"

However, he sounded hoarse.

He took a step forward.

- Boom! - That lightning exploded beyond the head of Ye Xiao.

He had digested the massive cold energy from Cosmic Hades, which was activated by the five hundred spiritual jade. Because of that, he had improved greatly. Now, he was the strongest among the four, so the first trial lightning hit at him first.

He didn't try to get away. He just let it strike him right on his head.

At the moment, Ning Biluo and the other two standing there were all shocked. They saw Ye Xiao's body turning transparent.

The bones, veins, Jing and Mai were all clearly shown inside his body.

As the lightning struck him, his long hair all stood up. There were electric sparks bouncing among his hair. That was so shocking. However, Ye Xiao looked so calm and steady!

While another lightning thundered up, it brightened the entire land. For a second, it was like daytime.

Two lightnings struck down at the same time, curling together!

They struck on Ye Xiao too.

Ye Xiao stably stood straight up like mountains. His two legs were like two strong swords, sticking on the mountain. He closed his eyes and let his handsome face to be illuminated by the lightnings.

The lightning struck on him again.

This moment, it started to go crazy on him. One after another, the lightnings struck on him...

The ninth was the last!

It was purple. It was so fierce that the firmament seemed being torn apart. The thundering sound was terrifying.

Ye Xiao made a long shout and said, "I am leaving first. Guys, we meet in Qing-Yun Realm!"

The nine lightnings made a mass of bright light at where he stood. It was like suddenly a sun that appeared on top of the mountain!

All others couldn't look straight at it because of the strong light.

Luckily, it disappeared very soon. However, as the light disappeared, Ye Xiao was gone too.

It all happened within such a short time as if it didn't really happen at all.

Even the grasses on where Ye Xiao stood was unharmed. However, he was gone.

There seemed to be a shooting star that flew over the sky.

Ye Nantian stared at the Sky. He looked worried and nervous.

"Brother, please, don't worry. Xiao Xiao is much more cautious than we both. It won't be tough for him to live in Qing-Yun Realm. Maybe he will become some figure someday." Song Jue tried to comfort Ye Nantian.

Ye Nantian sighed. He didn't know what to say at all, because he was so worried.

At the moment Ye Xiao left the Land of Han-Yang, he didn't know what emotion he had in his heart. It felt a bit disconsolate, also reluctant, but what surprised him was that he didn't really feel bad.

He knew his friends would live well.

He was relieved.

"This is just a tour in my life. Since the day I came down here, I was just having a tour. I always know it," Ye Xiao said to himself.

And then he disappeared in the crowd of lightnings.

"I will never look back, as Han-Yang is just a tour for me; I will ascend to Qing-Yun, to finish what I started in the old days!"

...

Chapter 748: Polar Ice River!

...

After Ye Xiao disappeared, the dark clouds became lower, and lightnings struck down together. Ning Biluo and the other two were stricken and covered by the strong light of the lightning. They disappeared too!

...

On the opposite side of the mountain where Ye Xiao and the other three people were getting through the lightning trial, there was another mountain.

On top of that mountain, someone wearing long white clothes with silk mask on the face was looking to Ye Xiao fascinatedly.

"You... are you leaving now?"

"I know you won't feel nostalgia for the Land of Han-Yang, but I never thought you would leave so soon. It is still long before the tunnel gets blocked, yet you left without any hesitation..."

Wenren Chuchu sighed. "Clever!"

...

"Xiao Xiao is gone. We should leave." Ye Nantian saw his son disappear on top of the mountain. He felt empty in the heart all of a sudden.

The only reason he stayed in this world was his son. Now that his son had gone to Qing-Yun Realm, Ye Nantian didn't want to stay here any longer.

Song Jue said, "Good!" He twisted his mouth and said, "I have had enough staying here anyway. I was too weak to leave, otherwise, I should have left long ago."

Ye Nantian laughed. "Typical Song Jue. You never change. Now, is it your home or mine you are going?"

Song Jue stayed silent for a while and said, "I should go back to my home and check everything. If I can't stay there anymore, I will go to yours. You know me. I truly don't like your home!"

Ye Nantian tapped on Song Jue's shoulder and deeply sighed. He didn't say anything.

He didn't need to.

As Song Jue said, they knew each other. They didn't need to talk much!

The two of them flew up and suddenly disappeared on the mountain.

Nobody had ever seen Ye Nantian in the Land of Han-Yang again!

War God of Chen, War God of Han-Yang, the legend in the world, only to be heard but never be seen ever after!

...

The only thing he left in this world, except the fame, was a letter on the desk in his tent.

It was a letter to the King of the Kingdom of Chen.

'My attachment to this world has ended, so I must go. Ten years in the Land of Han-Yang, I have fought around the world. There is comradeship in my heart, also blood in my hands... Now the world is in peace. War has ended. The Kingdom of Chen is surrounded by peace in four sides. I can leave now... This letter is too short to express my sorrow of parting. I believe it is better not to meet you, in case the sorrow ties me. Your majesty, take care.'

When the king read the letter, he burst in tears and cried for a long time.

What he had been worrying now had come true. He knew it would happen sooner or later, but still couldn't endure the grief!

Ye Nantian, Song Jue and Ye Xiao were all gone.

The military force of the Kingdom of Chen was largely weakened.

Luckily, the other kingdoms were unable to manage any war again. Otherwise, if any of them started the attack, the Kingdom of Chen would fall into dust!

"We have Feng Monarch and Ling-Bao Hall... luckily..."

That was the only thing the king felt good about.

Feng Monarch was a mainstay of the Kingdom of Chen...

At least people would have to hesitate when thinking about messing with the Kingdom of Chen.

Ye Nantian was completely tired of battles.

Ye Xiao had just made a one-time contribution. He never really wanted to help the Kingdom of Chen.

He didn't want the credit at all. He would rather let Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji to take the credit.

...

No matter what, Ye Xiao and Ye Nantian didn't care about whether the Kingdom of Chen could conquer and rule the entire the Land of Han-Yang or not.

...

It was finally the end of the story in the Land of Han-Yang, and what came next was the Qing-Yun Realm.

Ye Xiao was excited.

[Qing-Yun Realm, oh Qing-Yun Realm.]

[I, Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch, finally stand here again!]

...

It felt like as long as a century, but also short like an instant.

Ye Xiao entered a mysterious space after the lightning trial. He felt like floating—his soul was floating. All that he could feel was

unreal. The feeling of unreal was covering every piece of his soul.

He felt extremely uncomfortable about that. He was an experienced master in cultivation who was now living a second life, but he had never experienced this. He was just the same like Ning Biluo and the others. He was new on this!

Although he didn't like that feeling, he knew he had to get through it. There was no danger of it anyway. All he had to do was to endure. He just wanted it to be shorter and shorter!

Luckily, it didn't last long.

After a while, he felt bright in his sight, and he was no longer in that mysterious space.

There were sky and land again, and he finally felt the solid ground on his feet.

At least, he didn't feel floating now!

However, even though he knew he had stepped on something solid, it didn't mean he really was stepping on the land!

As the world appeared in his sight, before he had time to clearly see it, it became blurred!

[What the hell?]

The reason was simple. Since he stopped floating and then stepped on something solid, he unconsciously gathered energy on his feet. Unluckily, what he was stepping on wasn't really that tough. - Crack! - He fell down all of a sudden...

That was such a surprise. Ye Xiao didn't prepare for this to happen. He didn't have time to react. Besides, he was the one who did this to himself. He gathered the energy to the feet and broke what was supporting him, and he didn't have time to gather any energy to do a next move yet. The great Xiao Monarch fell into somewhere!

The next moment, all he could feel was extreme coldness.

"Holy heavens and hell!" he exclaimed. He used his qi to fly out immediately. When he spoke, his voice was shaking, "Bloody heavens and hell. The first thing happened to me is to fall into the ice river! What an unbelievable bad luck!"

Where he landed was exactly an ice river.

It was about thirty meters wide.

The river was frozen, and the ice was about one meter thick. Ye Xiao unconsciously kicked on the ice when he just landed, otherwise, he wouldn't break the ice.

Ye Xiao started to operate the qi and energy to dry his clothes as he kept looking around. He wanted to figure out where he was. What he could see was a long ice river between sky and earth, like a long shining piece of silk. He couldn't see where it came, or where it went.

"Hmm. Is this Polar Ice River?" Ye Xiao recognized it though. This was the famous Polar Ice River in Qing-Yun Realm. He was shocked. [Why would I directly fall on the Polar Ice River?]

[What the hell went wrong?]

While he was in thoughts, he heard people shouting around the place. Somebody was yelling, "There! Go capture! Quick!"

...

Chapter 749: Golden-scaled Dragon Fish!

"Over there! Block the way!"

"Do not let it escape!"

"I see it... Damn it! Why didn't you catch it? It was right in front of you just now!"

"You think I don't want to catch it? It is just too fast... Here it comes..."

"Focus! Focus! Everybody, be careful..."

Shouts sounded one after another. This place became noisy.

By hearing what those people were shouting, Ye Xiao knew what was happening immediately, as he knew about this place well!

It was the Polar Ice River. What could cause such a chaos was...

Ye Xiao looked down to the water under the ice. As expected, he found something. What he saw was a red shadow under the ice, moving at an extremely fast speed. He saw it moving dozens meters away on the left, but the next moment, it had gone thousands meters away to the right.

What was that thing moving so unbelievably fast?

Well, it was not the only living thing that could move so fast!

- Shoot! - A man moved fast, fleeing over Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao's hair was blown up in the air because of it. That was top speed.

Almost at the same time, another shadow fled over like lightning. Ye Xiao was on his way, so he pushed Ye Xiao and murmured, "Are you a fool? Why stand there like a rock? It just go under your feet. Why didn't you catch it? What a waste..."

The next moment, more shadows moved over...

Endless people were moving. Ye Xiao didn't have time to see through everything. Within a short while, he had been pushed

over a dozen times.

He was tottering and couldn't control himself.

Those men looked hurried. They didn't even look at this man on the ice. All they cared was the thing under the ice.

A red shadow kept moving around, sometimes to the west, while sometimes to the east. That was only one shadow, yet it seemed to make the entire river red because it moved so fast.

"Capture it! Get it!"

A white-haired old man flew over with a sword in his hand. "Do not let it flee... Don't use your sword you idiot! Watch out..."

"Block it! Block it..." another man shouted.

Ye Xiao was already stunned.

He thought it was a bad luck to fall into the ice river, but in fact, he was in a much worse situation!

"I am done with such stupid luck! Look what I encountered." Ye Xiao sighed. He really felt like to cry out. "Why am I so unlucky?"

He already figured out what was going on.

In the Polar Ice River, there was a mysterious and spiritual creature, the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish.. Polar Ice River was the only habitat of Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. The river was among various ice mountains. It was cold, and water would be frozen on the river. However, the water beneath the surface was running. There, the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was the reason why the water wasn't frozen!

A fish thawed the water!

That was Golden-scaled Dragon Fish.

Stories about Golden-scaled Dragon Fish could be traced back to hundreds of thousands years earlier.

As a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish grew older, it moved faster.

While it was a baby fish, it didn't move that fast. That was easy to catch. However, young Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was valueless. Only mature Golden-scaled Dragon Fish had various marvelous efficacies. However, mature Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was almost the fastest animal in the world. It was nearly impossible to catch!

Other than that, mature Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was strong in cultivation, almost as powerful as Dao Origin Stage cultivators. It was even difficult to defeat it in a fair combat, not to mention its unbelievable speed. People should worry about getting themselves killed when they met that fish, before dreaming about catching it.

That was why there were barely anyone who succeeded in catching a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish, even though countless people coveted it!

Barely!

However, somebody caught it in the history. How did that happen?

Golden-scaled Dragon Fish would enter the third life stage after the infancy and maturation. After living for ten thousand years, it would enter the last period, dragonize stage! As long as it got through the dragonize trial and became a dragon, it would fly up the the sky and move around the world.

However, opportunity came along with danger!

The dragonize stage was the shortest period in its life, also the most important period. There were two phases in this stage. First was reserve phase. In this phase, the fish would try not to move as much as possible, so as to store the inner energy inside itself. At this time, it was like a bomb that would explode at any time. Once it was impacted by any outer force, it might explode!

That was a powerful suicide strike that nobody dared to fight in the entire Qing-Yun Realm. The fish might stop moving, but it was the most dangerous. Nobody could capture it at this time, unless

anybody wanted to die!

The latter phase was the last three days in the dragonize stage. The three days was the most important time. The first day, the fish would become smaller and smaller, until it became the size of a hand of a man. The second day, it would gather all energy it could gather and then burst ninety percent of the power to freeze the river.

The dragonize trial would only start when it was in the frozen river. A gate of rainbow would appear. The last day, the fish would break out the ice and enter the rainbow gate. Once it landed on the rainbow, it would become a golden dragon!

The moment when it got pass the rainbow, it would withdraw the energy from the river back to itself to make the river running again. That water would then breed new Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. The golden dragon would leave this world and enter the upper realm.

That was the story.

In another world, when someday the river was fully frozen, it meant a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was about to dragonize. At that moment, it was its weakest moment in its life.

That was the only chance to catch it.

To catch a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish and eat the inner core of it was a great fortune. It would grow a seed to aid the great power inside the human body. Besides, the energy of the inner core would stay in the body to be digested bit by bit.

At the end, the ten thousand years spiritual qi would be fully absorbed!

That was such a shortcut to the upper realm!

Ten thousand years spiritual power!

Ten thousand years cultivation!

Chapter 750: Coveted

Whoever ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish would get a great boost in cultivation. One year of cultivation would yield ten years worth!

After the beginning period, one year cultivation could bring one hundred years gain compared to others in the same level!

Other than that, there was another great benefit from the inner core. No matter in what level one was, with the inner core, there would be no bottleneck problem during the cultivation process!

To the cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm, that was a lure that nobody could resist.

Nobody could say no to it.

However, if the fish became dragon, then those who had tried to hunt it on the ice river would be killed by it.

It would absorb the spiritual power from them, and nobody would be able to survive.

No matter how strong they were, or how noblest they were.

No exception!

To the golden dragon that had been transformed from a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish, any other living forms were nothing but ants!

Ye Xiao was one of the local people in Qing-Yun Realm. Surely, he wasn't strange to this story. He remembered it, and he bitterly smiled. He never expected to encounter such a thing right after he returned to this world.

The Golden-scaled Dragon Fish had shown up several times in the history, yet only one was captured. Once it was turned into a dragon, those who had hunted it would die in its stomach.

Sometimes, even the innocent who were about one hundred miles around would die too.

Many of them were Dao Origin Stage cultivators!

It meant too much to successfully capture the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish! Since someone had succeeded once, it certainly could be done again!

Even though people all knew it might cost their lives to make the attempt, there were still lots of them betting on it.

Right now, those men running on the river were definitely a part of it.

However, it was also a lucky thing for Ye Xiao. He just returned to Qing-Yun Realm, and he met a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish in its dragonization stage. He even couldn't believe it...

Was it good luck or bad luck?

The luckiest thing was that he stood right at the center of the area the fish moved.

Well, he was facing death!

He might get eaten by a fish!

Those who were chasing after the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish were all highly concentrated on the red shadow under the water.

Nobody even paid attention to Ye Xiao. None of them even saw his face...

At the moment, something was moving inside Ye Xiao's clothes. A small and snow white head showed up.

Erhuo had been sleeping in Ye Xiao's clothes since the lightning strike trial. Now, it was awake, and its ears flipped and then stood straight up!

Its eyes suddenly lit up. It kept looking at the red shadow moving in the water, stunned.

It was so serious, even its whisker didn't move a bit.

If Ye Xiao looked at it, he could find a long shiny line of saliva

hanging on Erhuo's mouth...

That was too obvious.

Erhuo was excited!

[What did I just see? That is... Miamiamiamia! ... Something good!]

[Delicious!]

It was thrilled.

Ye Xiao finally felt it. He looked down at it and saw its face. It was staring at the red shadow in the water.

He was enlightened.

As time was passing by, spiritual qi in the world gathered around. The cold qi was getting denser too.

The ice under his feet was turning thicker. If the ice was this thick earlier, he wouldn't have fallen into the water!

It was apparently the second day of the dragonization stage to the fish.

The next day, the entire river would be frozen and the fish would become a golden dragon.

When it became a dragon, all people around there would die!

Hundreds of people kept running on the river. They were getting nervous.

If they couldn't catch the fish before the river was frozen, they lost!

Everybody would die!

No exception.

The red shadow was still fleeting everywhere. It didn't look tired at all. The water was almost fully frozen, yet the fish was still moving fast and smoothly.

It seemed hurried but clear-minded. It moved like a lightning in the water, fast and strong.

The fish apparently didn't really care about the men on the ice!

It was certain that nobody could catch it.

It might not be as powerful as it had been earlier, but it was still the fastest thing in the world. That was its fastest speed!

Even lightnings couldn't be faster than it in this moment.

The people on the river would eventually become its food! That was what it believed!

The Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was a spiritual creature bred by sky and earth. No matter how powerful they were, no matter how many people they had, they couldn't catch it. It could only be captured by luck. The only person who had caught a Golden-scaled Dragon Fish did it by a lucky chance. He fell into the river, just like Ye Xiao. A Golden-scaled Dragon Fish had just burst out ninety percent of its energy to freeze the river and the river was just about to be fully frozen. The man luckily hit the fish and caught it by luck. That was how he became a legend and a myth in this world!

However, it wouldn't happen twice. The river was about to be fully frozen, and the rainbow gate was about to appear. The fish was nearly there! It was sure nothing could go wrong!

As long as it successfully became a dragon, it could withdraw all the spiritual energy back and also absorb the spiritual qi from those men!

Whoever dared to make the attempt to catch it should prepare to be captured by the dragon!

A man fled over to Ye Xiao. That man seemed to be in a panic. Ye Xiao was pushed one more time and staggered backward a few steps.

...

Chapter 751: Thousands Meter Ice; Golden Dragon!

Ye Xiao didn't want to stand in those men's way. Those men were all stronger than Ye Xiao in cultivation. They didn't dare to recklessly operate their true spiritual qi, in case it would lead to any worse situation, otherwise, they would have slapped Ye Xiao to death, because he stood there stupidly and didn't even help chasing the fish!

It was lucky for Ye Xiao that they didn't have time to deal with him at this very moment.

These men wanted to catch the fish at the beginning, but now they did it for survival.

There was a cold light that appeared deep inside Ye Xiao's eyes.

Most of these men looked familiar to him. Their clothes, their movements, their martial arts...

Some of them wore blue. They must be Saint Sunlight Sect's people... Some wore in black with pattern of stars on the clothes. They must be people of Saint Starlight Sect...

Those were hundreds of people of the three factions.

Other than that, there were some ladies dressed in long and white clothes. They were dressed just like Wenren Chuchu. They must have come from Misty Cloud Palace. Some others were dressed in white clothes with red ribbons, who were from Virtuous Flower Palace. There were also ladies from Ice Cloud Palace, who were dressed in white clothes with silver stripe... Almost every martial force in Qing-Yun Realm had their people in here.

Surely, there were also some rogue cultivators. Everyone of them was powerful in cultivation!

Ye Xiao glanced over them. He found that the weakest of them

was in Dream Origin Stage. The strongest ones were at least Dao Origin Stage, but he wasn't able to figure out how powerful they really were by just watching.

However, those strongest figures in Qing-Yun Realm were not here.

That was reasonable.

It was such a benefit to catch the fish, but it was too difficult to succeed. The risk was too big. Failure meant death, so even the strongest cultivators in the world didn't want to risk their lives in here. They were after all mainstays of their own sects. Once they died, their sects would fall with them.

Nobody dared to take the risk.

That was why those real powerful figures would never join such a hunt.

Even though these men were not the strongest in the world, they were strong enough to shock Ye Xiao.

However, these strong cultivators were all desperately fighting for survival at the moment.

Some of them even started to feel despair.

- Crack! -

- Crack, crack! -

The sound came from under the river. It was the water getting frozen.

The sound was like the steps of death, getting closer and closer!

As the cold qi was getting denser, many of the weaker ones were covered by frosts on the hair. The ice was getting more and more solid, and the river was being frozen fast!

The ice was only several meters thick. After just an hour, it became dozens of meters thick. The ice was going down deeper and

faster.

The red shadow was still fleeting under the water, not slowing down even a bit. It became faster and faster.

After a while, something happened. It was thundering loudly in the sky!

- Boom! -

In the sky, the air was moving. A mass of colorful cloud was moving over fast from far away.

"No! The colorful cloud has appeared!" An old man with white beard looked worried. "The rainbow gate is showing up! Guys! We have to do something!"

"Our lives are all in danger! Let's do whatever we can now!" Somebody jumped up and the sword in his hand emitted a long sword light striking down on the ice.

It was the first time somebody made an attack to the ice. Before this, they were all afraid to affect the gathering of the spiritual qi and tried not to be knocked down by the fish. Nobody wanted to interrupt the fish during the dragonization stage, however, they were losing their chance to live. They couldn't hesitate any longer!

- Crack! -

The ice was cracked. That red shadow was exactly moving towards the crack. The sword strike exactly blocked the way of the fleeting red shadow.

Did the sword strike made a great contribution?

The man who made this strike died because he had used every bit of his spiritual qi. He fell down as the strike was made, however, what he had done was meaningful. It slowed down the fish a little bit after all.

That could change the result!

It brought hope to everybody else.

A great hope!

Countless sword lights kept striking down like rainstorm. Suddenly, the ice on the river was ruined into pieces.

However, even so, the red shadow was still fleeting among the attacks like nothing changed. It didn't even stop moving.

The attacks of all these powerful cultivators which were made with full efforts, that could destroy the entire river, actually didn't even touch the fish a bit.

The ice was hit into many pieces, but then started to become whole again after the sound of cracking. The ice river was back to what it looked like.

There were many cracks inside the ice. Those were marks of the attacks. They made the ice look colorful and dazzling.

The ice was actually getting denser after reformed.

Those who were stronger than others among those people tried to attack again, but it was just a waste of power!

After a while, from deep in the water, some strange sound came out. It made people feel sour in the teeth.

The river... was fully frozen!

The surface was over a dozen meters higher than the bank. That was such a wonderful scene!

From the surface to the bottom, from the riverhead to the estuary, the river became a giant long crystal!

Many of those people didn't give up yet. They kept striking on the ice crazily, but nothing happened. They wouldn't stop, even if they could just make the rainbow gate to show up later. However, the river was all frozen. They were completely hopeless now. No matter what kind of attack they tried, nothing happened. All they could do was to make a few white and small scallops on the ice.

The ice was even harder than steel now!

Time never waited. The splendid colorful cloud had arrive above the ice river.

At the same time, an invisible force from the sky was getting stronger as it suppressed down on everyone.

The rainbow gate was about to appear in people's sight.

It was coming.

"We are done for!"

...

Chapter 752: Unlucky Dude!

They knew they were all going to die. All they did was just stared at the rainbow gate with wide opened eyes.

They knew that once the rainbow gate was fully formed, they would lose their lives.

However, there was nothing they could do, even though the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was just right under the ice where they were stepping on. They couldn't even break the ice.

As long as the rainbow gate was settled, the fish would get through the gate fast and become a dragon immediately. They didn't have the capability to stop it at all!

Everybody knew that the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish was horrible. It was strong enough to kill anybody in Qing-Yun Realm, however, it was a story from ten thousand years earlier. The common thought they had was that even though it was horrible, it was just a fish. They couldn't imagine how horrible it could be. Since there was a person who captured it, they could do it too!

That was what they had in mind!

However, at this moment, when the fish was about to become a dragon, they deeply felt the horror from it.

They felt despair. [Am I really going to die here today?] They all had the same thought.

The suppression from the sky was getting heavier. Some of them couldn't even breathe smoothly.

The rainbow gate was gradually showing up and descending.

The people didn't do anything. They knew it was just wasting time. They were standing there, waiting for the sentence of fate.

Even gods couldn't save them!

Well, not really... especially if anybody could catch the fish after

it rushed out the ice and before it reached the gate!

However, the fish was too fast...

Everyone was certain that nobody in this world could move that fast to catch the fleeting Golden-scaled Dragon Fish!

It was just an idea that could never be done!

Nobody was able to do that!

"We are done for!" An old man, who was dressed in the white clothes of Green Moon Palace, stood beside Ye Xiao, looked up at the rainbow gate, and sighed with a pale face.

There was a pattern of a moon on his chest, nearly appearing to be a full moon. Apparently, he must be in an important position in his sect. He was Dao Origin Stage, so absolutely, he should be part of the first league in Qing-Yun Realm.

At the moment, no matter how powerful he was, he looked gloomy, with pale face and glazed eyes.

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and said, "You are done... What about me?"

He didn't want to be pessimistic. Reality was cruel. That bloody fish was too fast. Even Xiao Monarch in his prime days couldn't catch it. Death was getting closer, yet there was nothing he could do but just smile bitterly!

[Heavens! Why do I have to live in such a bitter life. I have just come back from death. Why do I have to encounter such a deadly situation when I just returned to my homeland!]

[Why is it always so unlucky for me?]

[It can't be more tragical, can it?]

[Erhuo... Erhuo... Can you...]

Erhuo slightly curled its body in Ye Xiao's arms. Its two hind legs had stood on Ye Xiao's chest... Its eyes were widely opening. It was

so concentrated, looking forward at the red shadow under the ice.

[Delicious food!]

[Don't you run away!]

That old man looked at Ye Xiao and found that he was so weak. [He is so damn weak... How dare he come to this place? What a miracle! Such a trash didn't get frozen to death in here!]

"Where are you from? What sect?" the old man frowned and asked. "You have good talent. You actually survived the coldness in here with your pathetically low cultivation capability. Your masters must be fools. How could they let you be here? That is suicide! Don't they care about their young generations anymore?"

Ye Xiao bitterly smiled. "Elder, I am from not from any sect here. I don't have a sect... Well... In fact, I am not even from Qing-Yun Realm. I just came from the lower realm today... And... I landed here unluckily..."

The old man was shocked. "What? You just came up to this world? ..."

He checked Ye Xiao's cultivation status and didn't feel any trace of Qing-Yun Realm. He suddenly felt better. [Somebody f*cked up even worse than me.]

He didn't feel that bad thinking about Ye Xiao.

That was human.

When one feels despair in life, to find somebody living even worse would be a relief... Even though the old man knew they were all going to die, he still felt better to know the existence of Ye Xiao.

That was such an indescribable status of mind!

He knew it was wrong to gloat, but he couldn't resist the relief and comfort from it. That was the dark side hidden in human's heart.

However, nobody should blame such a thought. Nobody could

think better than this old man. They are all human beings after all! Nobody is a saint!

After thinking for a while, the old man laughed. He tapped on Ye Xiao's shoulder and said, "Well, then you must feel even worse than we do now. It is your first day here yet you have to face such a thing, which wouldn't happen twice in ten thousand years... We at least have lived in Qing-Yun Realm for many years... Hmmm. You probably don't know the story of this fish. I don't have time to tell you everything. I guess you will have to be a man who die with questions..."

Ye Xiao felt ten thousand alpacas running over his heart shouting rough words. He really didn't think he would give that old man the last chance to gloat.

He was speechless, thinking about how unlucky he was.

He landed in the center of the hunting area and then the rainbow gate was formed...

He couldn't even flee! He just fell to the head of the death!

[What makes me angry the most is that I f*cking know the story about this place and this bloody fish. I am well aware of it! You people came here to seek death, but I never wanted to come!]

...

Chapter 753: Mia!

People who wore the same white clothes like the old man all gathered over to the old man. They all looked to be in despair. Green Moon Palace was known for their art of beast training. Over half of the hundreds were from Green Moon Palace this time, but now they were going to lose the most in this hunt.

People all unconsciously gathered around together, preparing for the battle of death which was about to come.

They knew that they would eventually lose their lives, but they still wanted to fight till the last second. Nobody wanted to give up before it ended.

The old man shouted, "Everyone, come over! Gather our power and listen to my order. The last fight, it is our last strike and our last sound we will leave in this world. Do not hand your fate to luck! Do your best on this strike!"

"We are not going to catch the fish now. We are going to kill it before the last second comes. It is in the weakest moment. As long as any of us successfully hit it, it dies! All we need is to..." As he spoke, even he didn't believe in what he just said. That was something impossible to do! He knew it!

Everybody near him was showing a face of grief. They knew it was hopeless, but they still shouted in response, "Yes!"

With a flickering light in his eyes, the old man turned to Ye Xiao and said, "Young man, I should have asked more about your background, but today is a special day... We are all going to die together. I guess I should just leave everything else aside."

He paused and then went on, "You... You are such an unlucky man. You are going to die on the first day you come up to this world... Look how fate plays you..."

He sighed.

As the old man said so, over two hundred people around him all looked at Ye Xiao at the same time with strange looks. [This guy just came up here? Why would he land in this place?]

[I can't believe there is such a sad story in the world...]

[His life is even worse than mine...]

[His life is worse than any of ours!]

[Well, to die with somebody even unluckier than us, we should be happier to embrace it! We are not the worst after all.]

Ye Xiao was speechless again!

[Can't you stop mentioning anything about luck again?]

[I am having the bad luck that I have never had before! I am dying for it now! Great! Once the stupid fish becomes a dragon, even if I am as powerful as I used to be back then, a master in Dao Origin Stage, I still cannot defeat it. And look how weak I am now?]

[Is this really my destiny?]

[Isn't it too... tragic?]

At the moment, the rainbow gate suddenly descended faster, like a big mountain falling down from the sky!

The next moment, it stopped right there, dozens of meters high from the surface of the ice river.

Under the suppression, nobody on the ice dared to move a bit!

They couldn't even move their fingers, not to mention the attempt to catch the fish. They all looked so desperate on the face...

The fish was bound to become a dragon. The world had recognized it, and nothing would go wrong.

With a sound, the red shadow escaped from the ice.

They all saw it clearly. It was a small fish with golden scales, the

same size as a human hand.

In the sunlight, it shined with splendid glows, like a rainbow, rising from the ice. - Shoot! - It just jumped out fast. It was faster than anybody could imagine. The rainbow gate was about half a hundred meters away, yet it seemed able to reach the gate immediately after rushing out the ice!

It would only take it one second! That was all!

Everybody closed their eyes in despair.

However, at the very moment, a voice sounded, "Erhuo!"

While Ye Xiao spoke, he felt his chest was hit. A stream of great power shot out from his chest.

Erhuo kicked on his chest so hard and rushed out like lightning! A great reverse impact nearly broke Ye Xiao's ribs.

A white shadow shot out in an extreme speed, even faster than lightning!

It was Erhuo!

It burst in energy!

[Heavens and hell! I just saw a delicious fish! How can I let it go away in front of my eyes?]

[Look at that fish. Look at the golden scales... It must be very delicious!]

[I will not let it run away!]

Thus...

"Mia!"

After just a shout, Erhuo had already turned around and come back from the rainbow gate!

It turned out the Golden Scale Dragon Fish wasn't the fastest creature in this world. At least not with Erhuo living in here. Even though Erhuo rushed out later, it caught up with the fish and got

it! It got the fish in the mouth!

It was a simple move, and all that mattered was speed. Nothing special. While the fish was about to touch the rainbow gate, Erhuo bit it on the tail and dragged it back!

That was accurate!

Right after Erhuo got the fish in its mouth, it kicked on the rainbow gate to rush back. However, that rainbow gate was not something ordinary. It wouldn't allow any creature to touch it freely.

Even though Erhuo was talented and spiritual, it was still in its infancy stage. Its hind feet were burned by it. The pain drove it crazy as it started to run back to the ground as fast as it could. A white shadow, having the red shadow in it, made a great rainbow of white and red. It moved even faster than earlier.

Erhuo was panicking.

The fish was moving in an extreme speed in Qing-Yun Realm. Erhuo ran to it in an extreme speed and caught it in its mouth. After its feet was burnt, it ran back with a speed even faster than anything in the world. It was the fastest anyway. It was difficult to describe with language!

Erhuo was moving faster than anybody could recognize towards Ye Xiao and hit on him.

Ye Xiao didn't know things would go this way. He sat on the floor and kept his mouth opened. He was shocked. He couldn't believe Erhuo could be that horribly fast.

Before he realized it, he felt something fishy in his mouth.

There seemed to be something in his mouth. He unconsciously bit it...

"Mia!!!!"

Erhuo shouted with anger.

It was the Golden Scale Dragon Fish! Ye Xiao just bit off the fish's head!

...

Chapter 754: Accidentally!

Although Erhuo had bitten the fish in its mouth, it didn't have time to swallow it before getting burned on the feet by the rainbow gate. It slightly loosened its mouth because of the pain and it gave the fish chance to struggle. However, Erhuo was so fast. The fish couldn't get out of it. When Erhuo hit Ye Xiao, the fish accidentally fell into Ye Xiao's mouth.

Ye Xiao felt it quite fishy at the beginning, but soon it wasn't fishy anymore. It became a stream of warmth, rushing down to his throat, running into the dantian and turning into countless streams of qi. After just a while, the qi disappeared in his bones and muscles.

He only felt indescribable comfort!

The inner core of Golden Scale Dragon Fish was exactly in the head. Ye Xiao actually swallowed the entire fish head.

Erhuo was stunned. It tried so hard to get the fish back, yet half of it was eaten by Ye Xiao. It kept whining in anger and regret. [Why would I be so careless! I should have bitten it tight. How could it get into Master's mouth? Fine. If he didn't bite it, it might have fled away. My feet got hurt. I might not be able to catch it again anyway. At least I can have the other half...]

As it thought so, it didn't want the rest of the fish to be snatched by Ye Xiao, so it opened its mouth and swallow the fish immediately. Its eyes were lit up all of a sudden.

"Meow~" It looked completely satisfied, no longer angry.

[He just ate the head and it is not the most delicious part... The best part is the pure essence in the fish's body, now in my stomach...] Erhuo felt satisfied about it, as if it had taken the advantage.

In fact, the inner core was the most valuable part for human. The

pure essence was also something great, but Ye Xiao wouldn't be able to digest it...

The pure essence was actually the most useful part for a spiritual creature like Erhuo!

That made the best use of both things. No matter how valuable something was, it should always be used in the proper way.

After everything that accidentally happened, Ye Xiao and his cat both got what they need. What a happy ending.

They both got the best they could!

It was truly... unexpected!

Suddenly, the rainbow gate exploded and broke into a mass of colorful clouds filling the sky. After a while, it disappeared with nothing left.

Ye Xiao felt a bit pricking all of a sudden.

He looked around and found the others all staring at him with greediness in the eyes. Greediness aside, there were also anger, surprise, confusion... All in all, these people showed all kinds of emotions, except happiness.

They all stared at Ye Xiao.

They were free from death now, in a way that none of them could believe.

They worked so hard yet got nothing.

It was never a simple operation to hunt the Golden Scale Dragon Fish. People would have to risk their lives for it, and all those sects had been sending their men to check on this area for thousands of years... It cost a lot...

Every one hundred years, they made a substitution for the former group. Some of the people particularly worked around the river as a long time scout!

All they had done was for the fish in the myth.

All that supported them was the tiny possibility to catch the Golden Scale Dragon Fish.

Now it finally showed up, yet it ended up in the mouth of somebody new in the world! He just swallowed it!

No matter what, he saved everybody though.

If he didn't get the fish, everybody died.

Now what should they do?

No matter what they wanted to do, they gathered around Ye Xiao, staring at him, with complex emotions in the eyes. Nobody talked.

Those from Cold Moon Palace had been around Ye Xiao for some time. Now, they were also staring at him with strange looks.

The old man with white beard showed complex expressions in the eyes at the beginning, but then it changed into a friendly expression. "Young man, you have just come to this world. I am sure you will need somewhere to live. You and I, we are destined to meet each other. Why don't you join Cold Moon Palace?"

The others were all shocked. The old man continued with a warm smile, "I am old. I have wasted a lot of my life. I don't think I can ever achieve any greater. However, I am still one of the ten grand disciples in Cold Moon Palace. I can make a good recommendation of you to the elders in our sect. It should be enough to give you a bright future. I am quite certain."

He kept talking to Ye Xiao, "No matter how talented you are, you have to find yourself a shelter in Qing-Yun Realm, which can protect you from harm. You must find a safe place before any effort to improve yourself... I am not trying to scare you. Today, you have eaten the Golden Scale Dragon Fish. You will definitely become target of all martial forces in Qing-Yun Realm... Please, think about it. Do not put yourself in danger."

The others all understood what this old man wanted.

The fish was eaten by Ye Xiao.

No matter how angry they were, there was nothing they could do to change the fact!

The inner core got into Ye Xiao's mouth and became part of his energy in the body immediately. Even if they swallow Ye Xiao alive, they could never get anything from it anymore...

The inner core of the fish could only be absorbed once.

The energy could either be absorbed by the dragon or the person who swallowed it. They had no second chance.

In Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai, there was full of the energy from Golden Scale Dragon Fish. Even if they ate Ye Xiao alive... it was just a little bit better than meat.

The energy was bonded to the soul. Once he died, the energy would return to the nature.

That meant there was nothing they could do to get the power from Ye Xiao.

However, if Ye Xiao went to their sect, they would have a powerful associate in the martial world, a superstar who had an unlimited potential!

No matter in which sect, as long as Ye Xiao kept cultivating, he would become at least the great guardian of the sect eventually!

If he could do even better than that, he would become the real dominator...

Thinking about that, everybody's eyes were filled with fever.

...

Chapter 755: Snatch!

Ye Xiao was new to this world. That made it even more convenient to these men. He hadn't sworn loyalty to any sect yet, so he was totally free!

He was a man who didn't stand in any position, like a blank white paper. He was a completely free folk.

No matter which sect recruited him, this sect got a great figure with endless potential!

Besides... he had already eaten the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish.

There was nothing else they could do about it...

Mission was failed, but they still had to be positive in the future. To get such a young man back to the sect would be a great contribution.

In fact... if any of them catch the fish, somebody had to eat it. To bring the man who ate it back to the sect was more or less the same thing. Maybe it was even better!

At the moment, after what the old man with white beard said, the others all knew what to do. None of them were stupid.

Thus...

"Young brother, I can see you are a talented guy. Look at you. Listen, our martial art in Saint Sunlight Sect is perfect for you. We are one of the seven great sects in Qing-Yun Realm. I promise we will provide you enough resources to improve yourself. You won't need to worry a thing in our protection!"

"Shameless! Isn't us Cold Moon Palace one of the seven great sects? We certainly can provide more than enough for the young man!"

"Cold Moon Palace is surely one of the seven great sects, however, what you mainly cultivate is the art of beast training. It

doesn't fit everybody. We, Saint Starlight Sect, have all kinds of martial arts. We are the best option for our young brother here. Come to us, brother!" another man spoke in a rebuking tone!

Suddenly, all sects started to brag about how good their sects were in order to recruit Ye Xiao.

Only the ladies from Misty Cloud Palace and Ice Cloud Palace didn't say anything, just watching them with cold eyes!

They certainly wanted to recruit Ye Xiao too. He was a treasure to them after all. However, these two sects only recruited female disciples. Men were forbidden.

No matter how talented and how full of potential Ye Xiao was, they couldn't recruit him... They did want him, but they couldn't, because he was a man. That was why they just stood there watching the crowd. The only thing they could do was to sigh and complain in mind. [How can you be so lucky? Why do you have to be a man? If you are a lady, those fools could just stay out of our way now!]

[Yet now we have to stay out of their way!]

Ye Xiao was panicking, at least he looked like so. He had to act like a rookie in this world after all.

The crowd was gathering over to him. He stepped backward and said, "What... You... What are you doing?"

The old man with white beard from Cold Moon Palace spoke again with a smile, "Nothing. Young man, relax. You showed up beside me. We are destined to be friends. I promise, I can take care of any trouble you will get into in this world. You don't need to worry about anything!"

Then he stepped forward and shouted, "I am Xiao Mufei, Cold Moon Palace. Listen to me folks. This young man is our disciple now. Please show dignity and respect! It is against the moral rule to take away other's disciple. That aside, do you think you can

snatch a person away from me? Whoever thinks he can, please come and have a try! I won't hold back!"

The others were all silent. Nobody dared to challenge him.

Ye Xiao was such a lucky man. The old man he met on the first day in Qing-Yun Realm was actually the most powerful man among all those men. Nobody dared to challenge him!

[That old bastard. That is shameless. He just forced that kid to be his man. None of us have the power to fight against him. What should we do?]

A man in white robe from Saint Sunlight Sect stayed silent with gloom on the face and then shouted with anger, "Xiao Mufei, we are all cultivators. How could you be so shameless to us? We all have spent time guarding this area in Polar Ice River. Now that things have changed and here we are, no matter to what end this will go, we should seize the chance to have a fair conversation. How could you be so arbitrary? There is no way we should endure your irrationalness. I, Mu Wuchen, will rise against you! Do you think you can do whatever you want just because you have the strongest power?"

As Mu Wuchen said so, the others all agreed silently. However, they also had different thought. [What a nice speech. Powerful words, sharp tongue. How honorable! However, doesn't the man with bigger fist get the right in Qing-Yun Realm?]

[The biggest fist means law. Since when do we have to follow any moral rules? Moral or not, do we really care?]

Although nobody stood up to support Mu Wuchen, his talk was to earn benefits for all other sects except Cold Moon Palace. That was why nobody wanted to stop him. They just watched how things would go and supported Mu Wuchen in silence!

Xiao Mufei heard it and spoke in a terrifying voice, "Mu Wuchen, what you said is right. We should have a good conversation before

things are done. However, you forgot one thing, the most important thing. Who have been guarding this place without a stop in the thousands of years? Who have been leading this campaign all this time? I am the one who make all arrangements here! Now I am going to make the decision for us. What? I don't think I did anything wrong!"

"Besides, what do you want me to do with him? Tear him apart and share some pieces to you? I will never allow it even if you dare to do such a stupid thing!" Xiao Mufei humphed. "This concerns the future of our sect. I am just one step ahead than you all."

He rolled his eyes while staring at Mu Wuchen, "You said you will rise against me? Hey. You should better think about it twice. When you decide to do something, you better make sure you have the capability to do it first. Otherwise, it will only end up nothing but a pathetic joke!"

...

Chapter 756: I Am Ye Chongxiao!

After that, Xiao Mufei coldly laughed. He apparently didn't care about being shameless anymore. This was about the future of his sect, so he wouldn't step back a bit.

Mu Wuchen's face turned green. He didn't say a word after.

The others were quiet too.

Xiao Mufei was telling the truth. If anybody else was the strongest one, he would also do the same thing!

Over one thousand years, Xiao Mufei was the most powerful one among all who had been guarding this place. He was the leader of this mission. Cold Moon Palace was the best at hunting in Qing-Yun Realm and they sent more men here than other martial forces, over half the number.

They should be the most powerful sect in this place now. Xiao Mufei was determined to get this young man who had just swallowed the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. Even though the others all wanted to stop him, nobody could.

However, they might not be able to stop him, but they still had the chance to kill the young man. Ye Xiao was after all a man who had just come to this world from the lower realm! It wouldn't be difficult!

Xiao Mufei asked them if they wanted to tear Ye Xiao into pieces and gave everybody one piece. Well, they did want it.

After all, Ye Xiao meant a great future to every sect.

It was great to have him in their sects, but if they couldn't have him, they would rather destroy him than leaving him to others.

[We can't have him, then we won't let you have him! No matter what, I won't allow him to become the super powerful figure that suppresses our sect hundreds of years later!]

There were always competitions in Qing-Yun Realm!

The competition in real life would only get more and more cruel in the future!

Cold Moon Palace was already one of the seven great sects. If they had one more genius super figure...

The men were all silent, but they nearly couldn't hold off the killing intent and the murderous qi deep from their hearts.

All they needed was a chance, a reason, maybe somebody making a first strike, then there would be a big fight for the man who ate the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish!

Ye Xiao was sensitive.

He surely knew those men wanted him dead.

He felt it hilarious though. A stream of cold murderous qi rose in his heart. [No matter what, I saved you all from being killed by the dragon.]

[Now you don't feel grateful to me. You didn't even say thank you to me. You want me dead.]

[Isn't it ungrateful?]

[Those of Cold Moon Palace only want me to live for their own interest. If I refuse them, they will also try to end my life with the others!]

[Look at these people from the big sects of Qing-Yun Realm!

Mu Wuchen stepped forward, with his hand on the sword. A mass of murderous qi rose up before he started talking.

Xiao Mufei felt the qi. He knew if Mu Wuchen made the strike, there would be a big fight against him. His expression turned cold as he blandly spoke, "Look. The hunting mission is completed. Cold Moon Palace should better leave now. See you guys in the near future."

Then he stepped forward and made a mass of qi rushing out to Mu Wuchen.

Mu Wuchen only felt pressed. He actually got blocked on the mouth and couldn't say a word.

Xiao Mufei didn't wait for the response. He grabbed Ye Xiao and prepared to leave.

At the moment, somebody shouted, "Young man! What is your name?"

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and answered, "Me? I am... Ye Chongxiao..."

The old man frowned. [Why are you so honest and dumb? Why did you answer him so quickly? You told him your name now? Don't you know the world is full of danger?]

Then he laughed and said, "Ye Chongxiao, good name! You will someday rise up to the top of the sky after cultivating in Cold Moon Palace with us! Hahahaha..."

With his voice resounding in the air, he had already gone hundreds of meters away with Ye Xiao.

All the other people from Cold Moon Palace followed him, fully armed, walking in lines.

Behind them, the men from other sects were left there staring at their backs with murderous qi.

"Ye Chongxiao..." Mu Wuchen murmured. "Guys, this name... seems big."

The others didn't answer, but the murderous qi was getting denser.

Name was just a sign. However, among those great figures, none was named with ugly names.

There was never any heroes named Li Dogsh*t or Wang Secondbull. Wang Chongxian was apparently a name of somebody

important at least.

"Guys, what do you think we should do?" Mu Wuchen spoke again. His face looked dark and cold.

"We have been here for the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. We never want any male disciple. Since it is done here, we should leave." A middle-aged lady in white clothes from Misty Cloud Palace waved her hand and said, "Let's go!"

Dozens of ladies turned around and left immediately.

"Misty Cloud Palace doesn't want a male disciple. Neither do we. He is just a lucky kid. Nothing more!" another lady from Ice Cloud Palace coldly spoke. "Off we go!"

And then one more lady showed up and blandly spoke, "We are the three great palaces in the world. You two don't want that guy. Then we, Qiong-Hua Palace won't have him too! Otherwise, we will become a joke to the world!"

Then she left with her people too.

Three great palaces were gone in an elegant way.

The others who were still there didn't have time to react. They were stunned for a while before they realized what they should do at the moment. Still, nobody talked.

The three palaces were always in a higher position in the world than the seven great sects. They didn't send many people to hunt the fish, and they weren't very powerful people, either. However, still, nobody dared to offend them.

They never had any men as disciples. It was known to the world. They shouldn't be blamed.

Besides, the three great palaces were too powerful to care about that lucky young man who had eaten the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish anyway. That was why the ladies just left without any hesitation!

Mu Wuchen glanced around the rest of the people. He said, "The three palaces are powerful. They don't care about that guy. We are not the three great palaces. If we want to catch up with the three palaces, we have to fight and fight till we defeat the others. It is still a long way to go before we are in the same height to the three great palaces."

"Cold Moon Palace may have that young man, but it takes time for them to get benefits from him. The three palaces didn't care about it, but we should pay more attention to it. We can't let that guy live and become the great power for Cold Moon Palace to suppress us!"

"We can't let them rise that high. Once Cold Moon Palace rises high enough, they will get on us first!"

Mu Wuchen looked cold in the eyes. "Besides..."

He didn't finish it. However, everybody else knew what he was going to say after that.

"Since so, let us..."

They started to have a discussion. The murderous qi was getting denser...

...

Chapter 757: Just A Cat!

"Chongxiao, you shouldn't have told them your name. I know you wanted to be honorable, but that was not a smart move. It might cause you lots of troubles!" Xiao Mufei told Ye Xiao while they were leaving fast. "Do you know you are a target to all now? You just exposed your real name. I am afraid... they will make lots of troubles against you."

Ye Xiao acted ashamed and said, "I didn't think that much. They are all superior cultivators. I am just a junior. I thought I should be honest to them..."

"Superior..." Xiao Mufei sneered. "They are superior? They don't deserve this word. What a joke!"

"However, they are indeed very strong though, compared to what you are now..." Xiao Mufei looked at Ye Xiao with encouragement. "Listen, kid. Just work hard. Soon you will find those superior figures admiring you when they look at you in the near future. You will become the superior figure that they have to look up to. Believe me. It won't take long as long as you work hard enough!"

A few young men of Cold Moon Palace lowered their head and smiled.

Ye Xiao smiled too, but it was forced. In fact, he looked nervous but he was sneering in his heart.

He told everybody his fake name on purpose.

It wasn't just a simple move. First, when people asked about his name, he realized he couldn't use the name Ye Xiao now, as everybody knew him in his previous life. He wouldn't use the same name before he became strong enough.

The three factions wouldn't like to hear this name.

One small mistake could get him killed. People in Qing-Yun Realm always showed no mercy to the possible threats!

Feng Zhiling was too famous in Land of Han-Yang. That was a bit risky too.

That was why Ye Xiao called himself Ye Chongxiao. It had multiple meanings though.

Second... this Cold Moon Palace was one of the three factions that hunted him down in the previous life.

Saint Sunlight Sect, Saint Starlight Sect and Cold Moon Palace! Sun, star and moon!

Ye Xiao wouldn't give up the chance to make some troubles for his old enemy for sure.

Besides, after he told everybody his name, there would be many people coming for him. It would create many opportunities to improve himself.

What Xiao Mufei said didn't really move Ye Xiao even a bit, so he just ignored it.

However, he knew Xiao Mufei was showing kindness to him, although he did it for the interests of his sect!

"Well, you have a good name." Xiao Mufei smiled. "Ye Chongxiao... Good. But if a leaf wants to rush up to the clouds, it needs wind! You need wind to send you up..."

"We, Cold Moon Palace, is exactly the wind you need!" he added.

Ye Xiao was shocked. "Thank you, Elder Xiao."

He was surprised. [I just casually made up a name, yet you read a lot out of it?]

"By the way, where is your cat?" Xiao Mufei said. He was very interested in that cat, since it captured the fish after all.

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and took it out. "It's a lazy cat..."

Xiao Mufei looked at it and it was looking back at him too.

Xiao Mufei was disappointed.

He had a closer look at it for a while and then clicked his tongue. "The nature's rule... I thought your cat must be something special. Some kind of rare spiritual creature. It captured the fish after all. Well... It turns out to be..."

It was just a normal cat.

He didn't finish what he wanted to say.

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. "Yes. I found this little thing when I got here. I gave it a small fish and it started to follow me... I can't even kick it away. I should appreciate it though..."

There was a mistake in what he just said.

However, Xiao Mufei didn't really pay attention to it.

No matter what... it just looked like a normal cat, like every cat in the world. Nobody cared about how it came. They didn't have time to pay attention to it.

Girls or children might like such little animals, but Xiao Mufei... he was old. He wouldn't feel it adorable no matter how cute Erhuo was.

He gave Erhuo back to Ye Xiao and said, "It must be a weird thing. Nothing happened to its body after that fish went to its stomach. A normal cat. Well, it moved so fast when it saw that fish. I was shocked..."

"That fish... was moving that fast when it jumped out though..." Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice.

"Right." Xiao Mufei wished there was an excuse for his incapableness. "We couldn't move. That's why it felt so fast..."

He felt lucky. "Luckily, the cat didn't bite the fish's head. Otherwise, we should all be fooled... The head is the only valuable part... The rest is useless..."

"If this little thing ate the head, it would be such a waste..."

Ye Xiao nodded. "That's true!"

Erhuo stayed in the palm of Ye Xiao. Its eyes were filled with annoyance while looking at Xiao Mufei. In its heart, it already started cursing him, [You stupid old bastard! What do you know about spiritual creatures?]

[Spiritual creature spiritual creature... What you know is only how to call it!]

[I am a weird thing? You are a weird thing! You families are all weird things!]

[The fish head is the most valuable part? Valuable your ass!]

[You ignorant sh*t!]

[Normal cat... Normal my ass, you ugly sh*t!]

[If every family has a cat like me... the universe must have been destroyed for a hundred thousand times! You old useless f*cker!]

Erhuo was furious!

[I hide myself well, you old f*cker! Don't you dare look down upon me!]

Anyways, people stopped being curious about Ye Xiao's cat now. That saved Ye Xiao from many possible troubles.

However, Erhuo hated Xiao Mufei since then...

In Erhuo's heart, it was such an unforgivable humiliation...

[There will be one day that I will let you know what real pain feels like!]

[Humph!]

It rolled up its eyes and humphed, and then got back into Ye Xiao's clothes.

It didn't even want to see that old man's face ever again!

"Meow!"

...

"It is not going to be a safe way back. Guys, be careful," Xiao Mufei talked to all the others. He looked solemn while gazing at the forest in front of them. He spoke in a deep voice, "Three hundred and sixty men I have here. Now, thirty of you go ten miles ahead! Once you find anything abnormal, sound up the warning. Stay careful!"

"Yes." Thirty men left the group and ran ahead without any hesitation. They soon disappeared in the forest.

"Number 4, you lead thirty men to stay behind us. Be careful about anybody running after us," Xiao Mufei said.

"Yes," a man with white face answered. He went behind with thirty others with him. They soon stayed a certain distance away behind the main troop.

...

Chapter 758: The Three Factions!

"Everybody, faster! Let's go!" Xiao Mufei shouted in a deep voice. He then grabbed Ye Xiao's hand and poured spiritual energy into Ye Xiao's body, so as to help him move faster.

They kept moving until the moon was in the middle of the sky.

While the moonlight shined on the ground, Xiao Mufei finally decided to rest for a while on top of a small hill.

Ye Xiao had been supported with spiritual energy by Xiao Mufei all the way along, yet he still felt like his legs were about to break. He kept being dragged and ran fast. While he was moving, he didn't clearly feel the pain. While he was resting and Xiao Mufei stopped pouring energy into him, he felt exhausted. The only thought he had was that he was going to lose his legs. He couldn't feel his legs now.

It was much more difficult in Qing-Yun Realm than in the Land of Han-Yang indeed.

Ye Xiao could run thousands of miles without stop and wouldn't breath heavily in the Land of Han-Yang. In Qing-Yun Realm, hundreds miles run could kill him.

This was a completely different level!

They put on the campfire.

The night was silent and dark.

It seemed all livings were asleep at the moment.

Moonlight was bright. Wind was breezing. Ye Xiao suddenly felt like he was just born to another life again. He felt a bit familiar but scared about this world.

He then smelled roasted meat.

"Master, do we have to be in such a hurry?" A middle-aged man sitting beside Xiao Mufei didn't understand the caution. He said,

"Seven great sects are always bonded together. Sun, moon and star, we are like brothers. This time we, three factions, have more people than the others. How would they dare to really reach their hands to us?"

"Seven great sects bond together?" Xiao Mufei said with a sneering look on his face. It wasn't easy to notice, but Ye Xiao was close enough to see him clearly.

Xiao Mufei looked at his disciple and said, "The three factions, the sun, moon and star call each other brothers... Do you really believe so? Do you really see their men as your brothers?"

"I do." The middle-aged man looked honest. He said, "I never doubt it. Besides, that is what I have been taught in our sect. Is there... anything I still need to learn?"

Xiao Mufei sneered, but then he just sighed.

"Dalong, I won't blame you for this... What you said is exactly what people believe. In fact, I used to think so for a long time. However, we can never trust in what people want us to see..." Xiao Mufei smiled bitterly. He seemed in grief.

He coughed. He looked sad at this moment, but then he sat straight up his backbone. He looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Chongxiao, you should listen carefully too. I am telling you all. Never stop being cautious. Do not forget what I tell you."

Ye Xiao answered, "Yes."

Xiao Mufei was in thought. He seemed collecting his thoughts and trying to prepare some words to say. After a while, he spoke slowly in a heavy voice.

"The three factions, sun, moon and star, we used to be quite close. In ancient times, according to the history on record, we were one sect. Three factions were from one sect. Our ancestor was invincible in the world. The skill, martial art and knowledge he had was peerless.

"Our ancestor had three disciples. Every one of them was talented and skillful figure. The first disciple accidentally learned the true mystery of the scorching sun, so he built the Sun Sect. It is what we know as Saint Sunlight Sect."

"The second disciple was a cowherd at the beginning. He liked training animals, so he went deep in the art of beast training. At the end, he learned the mystery of the scene of a wolf howling to the moon. With what he learned from our ancestor and all that he learned by himself, he figured out the Moon Essence Treasure, so he built the Moon Sect. That was where Cold Moon Palace started.

"The third disciple accidentally thought through the nature of the stars, so he built the Star Sect.

"The story of how the three factions were built, at the beginning, there were only Sun Sect, Moon Sect and Star Sect. Saint Sunlight Sect, Cold Moon Palace, Saint Starlight Sect... and all the other bullsh*ts were just to fool the world. They thought they made their names better, but I think Sun, Moon and Star are the best and most long lasting!"

Xiao Mufei took a breath and continued, "That is why we told you we are three brother sects.

"However, there is one thing we all don't understand. Since we are from one ancestor, why are the three factions keep going further and further from each other? After many generations, three factions fought side by side again. We looked bonded again, but in fact, we are no exactly like brothers anymore...

"We do fight together, supporting each other. That is true. What you think is right. However, at the same time, maybe it is completely wrong!"

When he said 'completely wrong', he looked so serious that it even felt horrible.

"Please teach me, Master," Fang Dalong, Xiao Mufei's disciple,

spoke humbly.

Xiao Mufei smiled blandly and said, "Three factions looked harmonious. If things go peacefully, we will stay harmonious as we are now. If what we recruited this time is just a talented man, who has a great chance to become a world shocking figure, the other two factions wouldn't say anything to interrupt. They might even help us return to our sect safely!

"This time, it is different. Chongxiao ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. He is bound to become a great figure, with ten thousand years of cultivation!"

"Chongxiao just got ten thousand years worth of cultivation today!" Xiao Mufei spoke in a deep voice, "Let's put it this way... Even if Chongxiao stops cultivating, wastes the rest of his life in the future, after hundreds of years, he will still get ten thousand years cultivation capability!"

Xiao Mufei looked at his eldest disciple with bright eyes. "In Qing-Yun Realm... What kind of people have ten thousand years cultivation? Even those supreme masters, one figure, two saint halls, three divine arts, do they have ten thousand years cultivation?"

"If somebody is going to take good use of the ten thousand years cultivation, the one figure, two saint halls, three divine arts, seven sects..." Xiao Mufei smiled coldly. "Will they allow him?"

"They would rather keep us from rising up and breaking over this world!"

...

Chapter 759: Allies They Said

And Dalong didn't pay attention to the part about the future. What shocked him was the ten thousand years cultivation. He widely opened his mouth and looked at Ye Xiao. He said, "That... ten thousand years... you won't need to do anything... to get ten thousand years cultivation..."

Suddenly, he felt sad. He didn't understand why one man could have such a different life to another.

[I have been working so damn hard, yet all I have is just a few hundred years cultivation... I am in a regular level in this world. Not good, not bad.]

[This young man, who has just come to this world from the lower realm, because of good luck, gets the chance to have ten thousand years cultivation!]

[How can I not be jealous!]

"Three factions are brother sects. That is true. However, there are always fights under the table. Everyone wants to be the best of the three... And there is nothing we wouldn't do..."

"Do you remember, some of our good men went out for a mission but ended up dead in strange lands. Most of them died under Sun Sect's and Star Sect's vicious hands. A few years ago, some of their talented men died... That was us... In fact, we all know the truth. It is just not a good time to put everything on the table..."

That was shocking.

Fang Dalong was stunned. He kept his eyes widely opened. He couldn't believe what he just heard. "How... How is that... possible?"

He put his hands on his chest in fear.

Xiao Mufei's face turned dark. He sighed weakly, "Don't worry

about your life... You are not that important yet. You are quite safe. When there is danger, everyone in the three faction will still reach their hands to help you..."

Fang Dalong was even heart-struck hearing that...

He didn't realize he was never a threat to the other two sects under such circumstance!

Truth hurts sometimes!

[I thought I must be important to the sect, since I am the eldest disciple of Master. I should be in those higher positions in our sect. I should be somebody in the martial world. Everybody in the three factions shows respect to me... I should be famous...]

[It turns out... actually... they won't even bother to kill me...]

[They would even help me, protect me, just because I am definitely not a threat to them!]

[That can't be more painful!]

Xiao Mufei looked at his eldest disciple and asked, "Dalong, do you know how to measure a man's value in this martial world?"

He was talking to Fang Dalong, but in fact asking two people.

Fang Dalong and Ye Xiao.

Fang Dalong was surprised. He didn't know the answer. Xiao Mufei sighed and looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and then carefully said, "It isn't depending on how many people respect him or recognize him. It depends on how many people wants to kill him and how many actually makes the attempt!

"As long as this man is strong enough to become a threat to others, people will want him dead. That shows a man's value.

"It may be cruel to say so, but it is true."

Xiao Mufei's eyes lit up. He looked at Ye Xiao's face in praise. He

recruited Ye Xiao just because he ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. He just didn't want the other sects to have such a powerful young man.

However, now he liked Ye Xiao for real.

That was right. Ye Xiao was weak in cultivation, and he was a rookie to this world. However, he was calm and wise. This young man respected the stronger ones, but always kept a sharp mind! What a diamond in the rough!

"That's right! The more people wants to kill him, the more valuable he is..." Xiao Mufei couldn't stop praising Ye Xiao. "That is a perfect understanding!"

Fang Dalong was humble. "Is it possible that the entire world wants to kill one man? If it is, how valuable this man is?"

"To be enemy to the entire world..." Xiao Mufei was deep in thought. It reminded him someone. He slowly spoke, "There will always one or two men like that who shows up in the history. However, they have different impacts to the world..."

"There was a man who died not long ago. He is... peerless." Xiao Mufei shook his head and sighed. "What a shame. Such a great figure has to die eventually. He who obeys the rule of the heavens lives, otherwise, he dies. To fight against the entire world is not an easy thing to do!"

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up.

Fang Dalong was curious. He tried to figure out who it was. Finally, he remembered something. "Ah!" He spoke with excitement, "Master, the man you said... could it be... was it..."

"Do not mention his name ever. Even though he died, his name is still influential. Whenever I think of him, I still feel scared. Not only me, I believe lots of people in Qing-Yun Realm will feel terrified just to hear that name. We don't even dare to say his name, even though he has died for quite some time now!"

Xiao Mufei smiled bitterly and then changed the topic. He said, "... So, the three factions. We look like brothers, but we fight even harder against each other than fighting against our enemies!"

"Because... allies always have a big impact on a sect's ranking position..." Xiao Mufei looked sad. "That is the dark side of human being... that we can never change."

"Now, because of this Golden-scaled Dragon Fish, we may become an enemy to the entire world. Those who want us to die will never stop trying to kill us all. There will be more dangers than we expect on our way home!"

He sighed. "The fights we have to get through next, will be... the most murderous you can see in your life!"

He looked around and said, "Fate is never to be predicted. Not to mention you, I... don't know if I can make it back safely."

"Because they are so eager to put us to death. They will risk their lives to destroy us, to stop us. They won't allow Chongxiao to get to our sect!"

"So, be ready! Stay cautious! That's the only way to save ourselves!"

After that, he stopped talking.

The fire put light on his face. His face looked terrible in the flicking shadow of the leaves on the tree, as if he was from a world full of darkness...

...

Chapter 760: Nature Exquisite Body?

Ye Xiao stopped talking too. He started to sit in meditation, trying to absorb spiritual energy from the sky and earth. This was the first time he cultivated in Qing-Yun Realm.

Erhuo was staying in his clothes, like a quiet child.

After a while, the enormous amount of spiritual qi started to gather over to Ye Xiao like tides...

Ye Xiao felt that he was floating inside the ocean of spiritual qi. That felt so good. He felt like flying in the universe.

The inner core created a huge lake of spiritual energy which slightly poured over his Jing and Mai through a tiny aperture. The energy ran over his body like a hot spring...

It was soft and warm, but also contained a slight sense of coldness. He felt like several streams of spring water were running inside his body. The energy slowly, went through his Jing and Mai and he felt his body became much more sensitive.

He felt like lying in the spring water, which was just warm enough to make him forget the passage of time. Every nerve inside him was in their most sensitive status.

At the same time, the dense spiritual qi from the Space started to run into his Jing and Mai too. The spiritual qi met the energy from the inner core in his dantian. They immediately merged and ran into every piece of his body together.

Spiritual qi from all over the world was rushing over to Ye Xiao because of his special martial art and the qi from Erhuo's natural skill.

It meant four sources of energy all rushed into Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai at the same time!

Over three hundred Cold Moon Palace disciples all sensed the

dense spiritual qi around them at the same time. They were confused but didn't waste the chance to absorb as much as they could...

They all sat in meditation too.

Xiao Mufei frowned. He knew it was abnormal that the spiritual qi from the world gathered together like this. He kept looking around but couldn't find anything special.

Spiritual qi could not be sensed by natural human senses. Only when one was operating his own spiritual qi could he feel it strongly. However, he could sense the spiritual qi's consistency and pure degree and that was all.

The next moment.

Xiao Mufei silently jumped up to a hundred meter height. He stepped on the air and he rushed up again. When he stopped rising, he raised his arms so that he could rise up dozens of meters high.

Till now, Xiao Mufei had risen over two hundred meters high. He looked down.

He couldn't see the spiritual qi, but he could see many other things, like the fog!

The fog would move along the spiritual qi. His disciples all just wanted to absorb the spiritual qi to improve themselves!

Xiao Mufei wanted more. He wanted to figure out what exactly made this happen. He tried to locate the source of the gathering by observing the fog. He was experienced, unlike others!

He looked down and found something... The fog over those men's heads were rolling. It became a vortex...

The center of the vortex was... the young man he just met... Ye Chongxiao!

Xiao Mufei widely opened his eyes. His eyes nearly popped out the eye frames!

He couldn't believe what he saw at the moment!

"He had just come here from the lower realm... He should be no more than level 2 of Spirit Origin Stage... But... Even Dream Origin Stage cultivator under level five can't do this..."

"His body automatically absorbs the spiritual qi... and gathers it into his dantian... Only those with supreme body could do this..." Xiao Mufei took a cold breath in, "Hmm... Only the legendary Nature Exquisite Body can do this. Only people with that marvelous body can absorb spiritual qi in such a marvelous way when they are so weak..."

"But... Nature Exquisite Body hasn't shown up for tens of thousands of years... A legendary physical condition..."

Xiao Mufei stared at Ye Xiao who was concentrated in cultivating. He was shaking!

[Ye Chongxiao has eaten the inner core of Golden Scale Fish by luck. That gives him a ten thousand years cultivation! And... if he truly has a Nature Exquisite Body...]

[Is it... his future...]

Xiao Mufei got down to the ground like a flying meteorite. He quietly walked to Ye Xiao and took a close look at his body, his skin, his face and everything...

After a long time, he found something different. There was a mass of light purple qi hidden under Ye Xiao's skin...

He wouldn't find it if he didn't check it very carefully!

He took a cold breath in and murmured, "He... truly has... the legendary Nature Exquisite Body?"

He sat on the ground with a complex expression on his face.

He looked at Ye Xiao and then finally made a long sigh.

He wanted to take Ye Xiao back to the sect, because he didn't want the latter to serve other sects. If Ye Xiao could become a loyal

member of them, it would be the best.

Along the way, he liked Ye Xiao more and more. He felt that he should protect this young man, however, he wouldn't sacrifice much for him.

He had thought about some possible situation. If things got real dangerous, he would try to protect Ye Chongxiao. If it cost too much to do so, like if he needed to sacrifice half of his men, he wouldn't do it. Ye Chongxiao was a valuable person at the moment, but it would still take time for him to improve. He might not be as valuable as the hundreds of disciples he had right now...

He would rather kill Ye Chongxiao immediately if it took lots of his men's lives to keep the young man alive. As long as he was dead, there wouldn't be any problems...

What they were fighting for was gone, so there was no reason to fight anymore.

However, what he just found out changed his mind.

Chapter 761: Unable to Escape!

[Nature Exquisite Body and ten thousand years of cultivation... He has both... He is more than just a talented young man... He can be a powerful monster that can even fight against the heaven's will! If... If he becomes one of us...]

Xiao Mufei breathed heavily as his eyes lit up. [Then... We can not only fully suppress the other six sects... but also... we may become even more powerful than one person, two saint halls, three divine palaces... and become the dominator of the entire Qing-Yun Realm!]

[That is possible! There is only one thing we have to do... Ye Chongxiao has to become one of us and acquire the chance to improve himself! All he needs is just an opportunity. Time means little to him. He has both marvelous advantages. As long as he could concentrate on cultivation, after hundreds of years, he can become one of the most powerful cultivators in the world, even the most powerful! That is not just a dream!]

His eyes lit up.

[If so... even if I have to sacrifice these men I have here, even my own life... I should do it!] He made a long sigh while sitting beside the campfire.

[Our sect is what makes us who we are...]

...

He thought for a long time and then took out a ring from a pocket. The ring looked ordinary. There was some strange green marks on it. It was nothing special.

He turned over and rubbed the ring...

After a while, a purely dark bird suddenly flew up silently. After just a second, it rushed into the sky and disappeared in the dark.

[I hope the sect... will send more men to me soon... This is too much of a responsibility on me...] He looked worried. [I... I think I am not able to take it any longer...]

...

The next day, early in the morning.

The sun just rose up. There was morning dew in the air. It was fresh.

Ye Xiao slowly opened his eyes. He saw over three hundred men of Cold Moon Palace who were ready to leave.

They were waiting for Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was surprised. [Why didn't they wake me up? They are all so much stronger than me. Why would they wait for me? A rookie? Because I ate the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish? Isn't this too much respect to me?]

"We saw you in meditation, so we decided not to interrupt. We won't want to stop you. Master told us not to wake you up unless anything dangerous happens to you." Fang Dalong smiled humbly.

"I see. Chongxiao must thank you all for the care." Ye Xiao smiled. In fact, he was confused. [It seems reasonable, but isn't it weird? I am too weak to have their special consideration.]

[Even though I did eat that fish... it is still unpersuasive.]

[Morals, kindness and all the other virtue mean nothing to cultivators, especially the powerful ones in Qing-Yun Realm.]

[They can kill me if they want!]

[If I die, they won't need to fight anymore.]

[Why would they do this to me? Treat me so well?]

Ye Xiao didn't feel strange about this though. Ye Nantian treated him the same way.

[But... Ye Nantian is my father.]

[These men, Xiao Mufei, Fang Dalong and the others... They are nobody to me.]

[That is nothing to compare with.]

[Isn't it weird? They way they treat me?]

Xiao Mufei saw Ye Xiao finish his cultivation, so he told everybody to get on the road again. They moved another three hundred miles peacefully. Nothing happened. It was like a leisure tour.

When they left the Ice Land, they still hadn't encountered anything dangerous. They thought there would be people chasing after them, but it turned out nothing happened!

It relaxed the hearts of the men. They lowered down a bit and started to make fun of each other.

Xiao Mufei didn't. He became more and more cautious, looking even more worried as time passed on.

He didn't even sleep at night, just sat cross legged. He didn't cultivate, but set his mind power out to sense everything around them.

Sometimes, when there were animals passing over, Xiao Mufei would check on them carefully.

He was extremely cautious all the way along!

As they moved further, he got more cautious than earlier. Under his influence, the others were also cautious.

Xiao Mufei was the eldest and strongest among the group, and he was an important elder in Cold Moon Palace. If he stayed alert, the others would definitely follow!

That was why as they moved further, they became more cautious. All of them.

No matter where they were, Ye Xiao was always in the center of the group. It was the safest place in the group!

Xiao Mufei's eldest disciple was like a loyal guard following Ye Xiao. Even when Ye Xiao needed to relieve himself, Fang Dalong wouldn't let him go alone!

Ye Xiao was speechless about it. He didn't know what to do about it.

He wasn't interested in being a disciple in Cold Moon Palace at all!

No matter how powerful they were... it meant nothing to Ye Xiao!

He even thought about escaping.

However, as he moved further, he started to give up that idea.

He was in the center of the crowd, so it was the safest spot, but also the most eye-catching!

Ye Xiao was the weakest among the hundreds of people!

The weakest of the others was in level four of Dream Origin Stage!

Ye Xiao was only level three in Spirit Origin Stage!

He had been cultivating under the others' protection all the way along, so he was level three, but when he just arrived to this world, he was just level two!

He was invincible in the Land of Han-Yang, but was the weakest in Qing-Yun Realm. It was a cruel truth that he must accept.

It was impossible for him to escape under the watch of these men!

He was unable to escape!

...

Chapter 762: Dark Pine Forest

Everyday, every second, on the road, eating, resting, at night...

Xiao Mufei would gather lots of his men and talk to Ye Xiao. Everybody sat in a circle except those on guard... A group chat... They talked about everything, including the martial business, gossips, love stories, revenge stories, weird things...

Xiao Mufei felt that he was so eager to tell something of what he had learned in his life to Ye Xiao.

What he said would make his disciples think for a while.

Someone would add their own opinions and ask for Ye Xiao's thoughts.

Ye Xiao didn't want to show off and he really felt bored about it. What he really thought would only make those men turn hostile to him!

However, he had experienced so much...

No matter what Xiao Mufei said, Ye Xiao could catch the point and then respond with a few words. Xiao Mufei felt that Ye Chongxiao was such a genius...

Every time after they talked, Xiao Mufei felt more satisfied with Ye Chongxiao...

Was Ye Xiao really learning well from him?

Of course not!

Ye Xiao was like a man who had a doctorate degree but looked like a kid being taught by a teacher about some simple lessons. He tried not to answer so seriously, but even so, his answer was always the best one. Xiao Mufei would definitely praise him!

However, Ye Xiao didn't learn anything. He knew the answers!

He thought about Xiao Mufei. [This man seems nice, but he is

surely not a good man. He treats me so well because he wants me to be a part of his sect. That is all!]

[In other words, this guy is a 'sect fanatic'!]

[The only thing he cares about is his sect.]

[What he values the most is the interest of his sect.]

[Everything must make way to his sect... including his own life!]

[Cold Moon Palace is the untouchable sacred place in Xiao Mufei's heart!]

[He can do anything, literally anything, for his sect.]

[He will die for his sect!]

[These great sects are lucky to have such disciples...] Ye Xiao kept thinking. He was curious. [I wonder what kind of education his sect gave him to make him so... loyal?]

Many of the young disciples felt jealous when they saw Ye Xiao being treated so well. When they looked at Ye Xiao, in their eyes, there was annoyance.

Ye Xiao just ignored them.

However, after a few days of travel, after the group chat at those nights, and after Ye Xiao kept giving his profound views on every topic... those young men started to think deeper... Because of that, they started to show respect to Ye Xiao.

They changed. They didn't look down upon Ye Xiao anymore. They saw him like a brother. At the end, they even looked at him with admiration. Their attitude to Ye Xiao was changed bit by bit!

Every time when Ye Xiao noticed their change, he had a complex feeling.

[These men got my brother killed and vanished me... People of the three factions...]

[After the days we spent together, I am sure they are all vile and

vicious. They kill without blinking the eyes!]

[But... are they really monsters? I don't know...]

After all, in Qing-Yun Realm, who had bigger fists had the rights. Those who didn't kill would eventually get killed. Whoever wanted to survive must kill without mercy!

Apparently, not just people in Cold Moon Palace were monsters!

In an afternoon.

They reached the top of a hill somewhere.

Xiao Mufei waved his hand and the others all stopped moving.

Ye Xiao tried to find what Xiao Mufei was looking at. What he saw was a big Dark Pine Forest about one hundred meter away ahead of them. They were standing on the highest spot in this area. What they saw was an ocean of dark pine trees.

"We are about to enter the seven thousand miles long Dark Pine Forest!" Xiao Mufei looked solemn. He sounded scared. "It is the... most dangerous part of our way home!"

"This is the perfect place for the other sects to attack us! A perfect place to ambush! It is the most convenient for them to make an attack."

"Once we get into the forest, I am not sure how many of us can make it out."

Xiao Mufei looked around his people. They were all standing up straight.

Those who had been leading the way had returned. Those who kept staying behind had caught up. They were gathering in this place.

"Before we go into it, I need to say something."

Xiao Mufei looked gloomy and a bit vicious, however, there was this noble spirit in him.

"Let me ask you, what is the most important thing in our lives?" he shouted.

At the moment, Ye Xiao was waiting for the answer too.

"Sect!" everyone answered loudly and put their right fist on the chest. They looked solemn. "In the endless universe, our sect means means everything to us! In the cruel world, my heart will only go after our sect!"

"Without the sect, I am a pile of rotten bones. With the sect, I am rocking the world!"

Xiao Mufei was satisfied. He said, "What should we do if the sect needs us?"

"We splash our blood for the sect! We sacrifice for the sect! We die with honor for the sect!"

They answered loudly together.

Xiao Mufei took in a deep breath and said, "We all know, Ye Chongxiao ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. He has a great future. As long as we successfully send him back to the sect, our sect will rise soon!"

"However, the other sects won't allow it. They will try everything they can to kill Ye Chongxiao and ruin the opportunity we have."

"That is why in the forest, there will be full of traps and bloods! We will go into the fight! We will fight in the seven thousand miles Dark Pine Forest!"

"All I want is one thing!" He sounded hoarse.

"Master! Don't worry!" Fang Dalong shouted, rising up his arms. "We won't let Brother Ye get hurt! We will sacrifice ourselves to protect him!"

...

Chapter 763: Danger!

"Chongxiao stays safe as long as we live! Whoever wants to hurt him must step over our dead bodies!"

The three hundred and sixty men shouted together.

Xiao Mufei took in a deep breath and raised his head. Tears filled his eyes as he shouted, "Go!"

Everybody walked down the hill in line.

They were marching to the Dark Pine Forest.

None of them hesitated.

Ye Xiao was always calm and steady, but he was touched.

Regardless of how Ye Xiao hated them for what they had done in his previous life, the spirit they just showed indicated that the three factions did have the capability to stay strong in Qing-Yun Realm for so many years!

The loyalty... the unity...

That was never to be found in the Land of Han-Yang.

It wasn't easy to make a sect last for more than ten thousand years!

Ye Xiao was sure about one thing. If he never had that history with the three faction in his previous life, if he truly was just a young man who had just come to this world and accidentally ate the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish, he would definitely devote himself to Cold Moon Palace!

He would become a loyal disciple in Cold Moon Palace!

He would spend the rest of his life to serve the sect till the day he died without regret.

Personal example always worked better than verbal instructions!

Truth was something nobody could ignore!

What they did, what they said, those were real! That was shocking!

Even Ye Xiao was moved, not to mention others!

However, to make a right decision was a different thing. He was in the opposite position to these men. No matter how he was touched, he wouldn't change his view. When the day came, he would kill them without hesitation!

...

After they entered the Dark Pine Forest, it became so dark that even they couldn't see each other.

The pine trees were covering the sky. They were stepping on the rotting leaves and grasses... The grass was different here. It was as tall as a man.

They just kept walking ahead carefully and silently. The forest was silent. What could be heard was only the sound of their steps.

Suddenly, Xiao Mufei's nose moved. He tried to smell something.

He then jumped up high like lightning and broke the covering of the pine trees. He grabbed something down in his hand.

When he looked at the thing in his hand, his face turned pale and dark.

His hands were shaking, and his finger joints turned pale.

Xiao Mufei didn't hesitate anymore. He jumped up again and then got down immediately. His face was totally pale this time!

"Master, what's wrong? What happened?" Fang Dalong was worried.

The others all looked over.

Xiao Mufei slowly opened his right hand and there was a little dead bird lying in it. The bird was black. Its feathers were sharp like steel.

"Iron-winged Sparrow!" Fang Dalong exclaimed. He looked at Xiao Mufei and said, "Master, did you..."

He didn't finish it. He was apparently terrified.

Xiao Mufei nodded seriously. That meant Fang Dalong was right.

Fang Dalong widely opened his eyes. The others all knew what that meant. They were all scared too.

Iron-winged Sparrow was the carrier bird only Cold Moon Palace used in the world.

"I jumped up there..." Xiao Mufei spoke with a gloomy voice, "and I found many dead birds up on the trees..."

Before he finished, some disciples already jumped up to check on it.

Ye Xiao was curious, so he jumped up too. He saw lots of little dead birds lying on the trees.

There was no bigger birds.

The biggest one was no bigger than a crow. There were too many dead birds and he couldn't count them at all.

The men got down with gloomy face too.

"We can be sure about one thing now. The other sects have prepared for this. This time, they..." Xiao Mufei spoke in a solemn voice, "... will do it in full effort!"

"They will die fighting!" he gritted with his teeth and said.

"Master... The dead birds... Did they kill all those birds? All of them? Why?" Fang Dalong couldn't believe it.

"We shouldn't be surprised. They didn't know what kind of bird is our carrier, but they know we are good at beast training. They just had to kill every bird in this place! I would do that too, if I were them!"

"Our problem is that the Iron-winged Sparrows we set out were

killed by them with many other birds." Xiao Mufei looked worried. "In other words... the sect has no idea what we are dealing with right now."

"We won't get any support from the sect. Nobody know we are here."

"From now on, we are on our own. We have to make the way out by ourselves... fight against the two saint halls, three divine palaces and the other six sects..." His face twisted. "We may need to fight against more..."

The three hundred and sixty disciples were all heavy-laden in the heart.

Those sects actually did such a thing to stop a young man from being a part of another sect.

They would rather kill ten thousand innocents to make sure Ye Xiao was dead!

That was vicious and cruel...

"We must stop looking forward to any help. We know our current situation. Be careful. Let's go!" Xiao Mufei shouted and led the way ahead.

Apparently, they were in such a dangerous situation and they were on their own. It was meaningless to say more.

Since nobody would come to save them, they must leave the forest as soon as possible, in case the enemies gathered more men. They moved so fast, trying to escape for survival!

The sun was setting. It became red like blood.

One full day and a night, they barely slept. They couldn't sleep. Xiao Mufei scolded them for this. "What are you doing? What if there is a fight you have to fight tomorrow? How do you fight with an exhausted body? Do you want to die in fear? Sleep now! Whoever is on guard, keep your eyes open! Or else we all die!"

The latter part of the night...

Some weird sound was approaching. It woke them up.

At the moment, any sound could arouse tension in their hearts!

One man suddenly exclaimed, "Somebody..."

Then it turned silent again.

The scary Dark Pine Forest suddenly became full of horror!

...

Chapter 764: Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snake!

They lit up torches and went over to the man who exclaimed!

The man was grabbing a strange snake, which was glowing. His face was dark. He was dead!

The man was level four of Dream Origin Stage, considered weak among the group.

He got bitten by that snake and died immediately!

What was that snake?

That was overwhelming!

Ye Xiao looked at it. The snake had a silver scale, which made it look like crystal. On its head, there was a golden caruncle!

The snake was dead too. Apparently, the man operated his full power to grab it. He died, but he also killed the snake.

"Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snake!" Xiao Mufei's face changed. He shouted, "Guys, stay together! Clean the area under your feet! Quick!"

Ye Xiao was shocked too.

Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snake!

The third most poisonous beast!

There were ten most poisonous things in Qing-Yun Realm. This snake was the third!

That was dangerous!

Many years earlier, somebody successfully extracted the poison from this snake. He used that to wipe out an entire family of a man who was level eight of Dream Origin Stage!

That was where the story of the Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled

Snake began! It shocked the world!

People below Dao Origin Stage all feared it!

...

Suddenly, sound of whistling came from afar.

It kept resounding and nobody could tell where the sound came from.

After a while, sound of something moving in the grass came along. That weird sound soon surrounded them...

Apparently, there was a lot of snakes moving over to them. They cut the way out.

"What... What should we do?" They were all terrified.

In the dark of the forest, they could nearly see each other. To be surrounded by a bunch of Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes was absolutely a terrible situation.

Xiao Mufei looked even gloomy. He never thought the enemies would be this vicious.

"Someone is manipulating these snakes. That whistling must be the instruction." He said, "This forest is their perfect cover. This is the most vicious and efficient way to attack. This is difficult..."

He looked up while staring at the pine trees and sighed.

Ye Xiao knew what he was thinking. To fight against Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes, fire was the perfect weapon. However, they were in the dark of the forest.

They might get themselves killed in the fire. If the trees were on fire, they might all die in the forest.

That was why they didn't want to set a fire.

It would also cut off their way out.

After a while, the men had cleaned up a clear area. It was about three hundred meters wide. There wasn't even grass in it...

They even cut off the trees and threw them out the area.

As the trees were removed, the moonlight finally splashed into the forest.

It lightened their faces, which were pale.

In the moonlight, they saw silver waves rolling around them. Endless Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes were moving over to them. They kept hissing and it scared everybody.

There were snakes on the trees too. The snakes stared at the men with cold eyes. Some of them had whirled their bodies, ready to rush over.

"I am afraid there are tens of thousands snakes around us..." Xiao Mufei made a long sigh. "Dark Pine Forest is their home. We all know it. Nobody dares to mess with these snakes, not even Dao Origin Stage cultivators. Nobody dares to draw them out of the forest... Once they were out, the world would be ruined! Thousands of miles around this place, nothing could survive. I chose to go this way because I thought they would fear these snakes!"

"But I never thought that they would use the snakes on us. How vicious!"

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He said, "Elder Xiao, I knew you are good at beast training. If they can draw these snakes out, can't you just make them go away?"

"They must have been preparing for a long time on this. It is too late for me to do anything." Xiao Mufei was in pain. "These snakes love the smell of human... Once they smell it, they won't get away..."

While he was speaking, some snakes already started the attack. The sound of hissing was everywhere.

The men who stood on the outskirts were fighting the snakes with swords in the hands. They were scared but didn't give up

fighting. They kept cutting the snakes apart when the snakes flew over to them.

"Be careful! Cutting them into two parts may not kill them. We must cut them on their neck, seven inches from their heads. Make sure you cut off their heads. Don't leave the heads near your feet! They might still bite you!" Xiao Mufei kept warning others.

As Xiao Mufei finished his speaking, the men all hurriedly looked down to the snake bodies on the ground. One of them saw half a snake with a head actually moving over to him and trying to bite on his foot.

He exclaimed and kicked it away immediately.

Luckily, with Xiao Mufei's instruction, nobody died!

The silver waves had turned into a bright net. Countless Silver-scaled Golden-caruncled Snakes turned beastly after they smelled blood. They moved even faster now. Things went worse.

- Puff, puff, puff... -

That was the sound of sword hitting the snakes. It kept sounding out. Such a sound filled the battle. It was such a tough fight.

The snakes were small but tough. It wasn't easy to cut through their silver scales. They had to pour their spiritual energy into the swords so as to cut the snakes' heads off. Ye Xiao was confident to handle one snake with one sword strike, but there were definitely more than one snake that he needed to deal with.

...

Chapter 765: Crowd of Snakes!

Even though Ye Xiao was in Spirit Origin Stage, if he encountered an attack from three snakes, he may be able to kill two of them, but definitely not the third.

He was unable to kill it, but he couldn't just let it be there. What he had to do was to knock it back and wait for the chance to kill it later.

In fact, everyone needed to face more than three snakes at the same time. They needed to face a lot. That was why they kept knocking the snakes away and they did this more than cut them off.

That consumed lots of energy. Thirty men who stood outside had just fought for an hour and they started to feel exhausted.

Tiredness was not the only thing they was facing. They also needed to endure the terrible smell from the dead snakes and the poisonous mist from their mouths. Even though they had prepared for that, they still got seriously damaged.

"Switch!" Xiao Mufei shouted.

If they didn't take turn to fight those snakes, they would die soon! It would be a great loss!

The thirty disciples heard Xiao Mufei as if it was song from the heavens. They immediately stepped back and thirty more men took their places. They rushed out and stayed stable. That expanded the defensive area for them. They just began to fight, so they were still energetic. Within just seconds, they had already killed over a hundred snakes.

However, after just a while, these men were exhausted too. They started to knock away the snakes instead of killing them. The defense area became smaller again!

Although it wasn't a good situation to be surrounded by the

snakes, they could still hang on for some time!

Ye Xiao looked away and found the snakes had become an ocean of silver out there.

In the silver ocean, the silver glow never stopped shining. It moved so fast like a horse running in the fastest way. Countless snakes kept striking the defensive line. Every minute, there were snakes being chopped in to parts, but more and more snakes rushed over without fears!

The silver glow was shining from far away. There were many more snakes coming over to them.

The whistling was still sounding, commanding the snakes...

Xiao Mufei thought there might be tens of thousands of snakes. In fact, he was wrong. There must be more than that. There were more than one hundred thousand snakes!

Ye Xiao frowned and tried to think of a practical way to deal with the situation. It was utterly dangerous this time. If he couldn't come up with a method... he would die with these men in this forest.

Xiao Mufei was powerful enough to escape though, if he was lucky.

However, after fighting for a long time, he wouldn't be powerful enough anymore. He would also die in the crowd of snakes eventually!

What a vicious trap.

Ye Xiao had to think of something practical, and he had to proceed as soon as he could. Once the over three hundred men were all exhausted, nobody could fight anymore. Even though Ye Xiao could make the snakes go away by himself, there would be no one to help him deal with the enemy next!

He had to do it quick!

He frowned and thought hard.

In fact, he had thought of one method. As long as he told the others, they could be released from such suppression!

Ye Xiao didn't know much about this snake. He hadn't seen one before. However, he happened to know the weakness of this snake!

The weak point wasn't the neck. It was the caruncle.

Cut off the caruncle and the snake would die immediately!

However, he couldn't tell them.

If he told them, they might suspect his real identity.

'You are a young man who have just come to this world. How did you know the weak point of this snake?'

That was a question he didn't know how to answer!

'You actually knew such a thing. Does it mean you are not new to this world?'

'I guess you want something from us, don't you?'

Well... he might get himself killed because of it...

For people in those great sects, when they suspected somebody, they just killed them. No matter what the truth was, the man who had the possibility to be an enemy would get killed!

Ye Xiao would never make such a mistake.

However, if he didn't tell them, they would all die...

Once they died, Ye Xiao wouldn't be able to live.

Ye Xiao kept thinking about it. He tried to figure out another way to help them. He wanted to let them know about this secret but wouldn't get himself involved!

Erhuo suddenly showed up its head. The color of silver filled its sight. - Mia! - It exclaimed. The hairs on its body all stood up.

Its eyes became roundish.

[Oh my heavens and hell. Scare the wit off me. Why are there so many snakes?]

[What is going on?]

"What?" Ye Xiao frowned while looking at the cat. He said, "Oh, you are scared? You? Aren't you the peerless spiritual creature? How can you fear such 'mortal' beasts?"

Erhuo rolled its eyes up and rubbed its whisker. It decided to totally ignore Ye Xiao.

Then its two ears flicked!

[Meow... What did I see?]

[Holy heaven kitty!]

[Scales!]

[Those snakes... have scales!]

[Are they as delicious as fish? Look at their scales!]

It kept flicking its ears while rubbing its whiskers. It couldn't make up its mind. [Should I... have a try?]

[What if they are super delicious?]

[There are so many of them...]

[That should be enough to eat!]

[I have yet to experience even one good meal after following this needy master. How can I give up such an opportunity?] Erhuo stopped its claw. It was lost in thoughts... Suddenly, it rubbed its whisker again...

...

Chapter 766: Surprise; Suggestions!

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot... -

The snakes on the trees started to attack now.

First, the men needed to defend the attacks from the ground, and now they also had to defend the attack from the sky. Things got worse for the men of Cold Moon Palace this time. Everybody was in a muddle now. They probably would lose it.

Xiao Mufei shouted loudly and thirty men in the crowd jumped up high all of a sudden. They had been prepared for a long time. Their swords started to glow and they protected the others from the attacks in the sky. There were dozens of other disciples that kept watching the ground and swept away the other snakes on the ground as soon as they could.

The snakes had forced two groups of men to fight together. What a tough fight!

Ye Xiao was worried. One hundred and twenty men of the three hundred and sixty had joined the fight. Nobody died yet. However, as it went on, there would definitely be people dying!

Ye Xiao knew the weak point of the snakes, but that was all he knew. Xiao Mufei knew more than Ye Xiao about the snakes, but just not the most important one. Ye Xiao was worried and he knew this was urgent. He just couldn't think of a way to indicate the weak point of the snakes!

At the meantime, he felt something moving on his chest. He looked at it and saw Erhuo was thrilled. It didn't look scared at all now. He knew what to do now. He reached his hand and grabbed a part of a snake body.

Ye Xiao didn't know much about Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snakes, but when one hits a snake, they usually hit its jugular. He grabbed the snake on its neck. The snake was yet to die even

though it had already lost the other part of its body. It kept twisting but couldn't attack, as its jugular was grabbed.

And then Ye Xiao put the snake on the floor.

Xiao Mufei frowned and looked at him. He wasn't happy about that. [We all fight so hard for your life, and you are playing with the snake here... It is good if you help killing some, yet you just play with a dead one...]

He had no time to say anything about it on the battle. Time flew. He just pretended he didn't see him.

Erhuo saw what Ye Xiao did. It knew what he wanted immediately. Before Ye Xiao said anything, Erhuo casually walked over that snake and turned that snake over with a claw.

The snake was seriously injured, but it still hissed and stared at Erhuo fiercely.

Erhuo was pissed. [You little stupid snake. How dare you stare at me like that? You are just a dying snake!]

Erhuo opened its mouth and bit on the snake fiercely.

Of course, the cat won. Erhuo bit the snake head and then crunched. - Crack! - It bit off the head and chewed it, and then swallowed it without hesitation.

"You silly cat! Why are you so stupid!" Ye Xiao was shocked. He tried to open its mouth. "You fool! It's a poisonous snake!"

Erhuo rolled its eyes and licked its lips. Its furry face was full of indifference.

It thought. [Oh, my master. What an ignorant fool. Even you know this thing is poisonous, of course I know too! Would I eat it if I am afraid of the snake's poison? If you don't want me to get poisoned, don't let me fight that stupid snake. My man. I can't believe I am following such an idiot!]

[Hmm... The taste of the snake...]

The next moment, it licked its lips again and again! Its two ears stood up and flicked. Its eyes were like two searchlights lighting up!

[Holy heavens!]

[That... is such a surprise!]

[This snake... is full of nutrition!]

[It looks creepy but... tasty.]

When it looked around the enormous amount of snakes, its eyes were getting brighter. A long line of saliva appeared on its mouth.

"Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snake is one of the most poisonous things in Qing-Yun Realm. They could only be found in this Dark Pine Forest," somebody spoke in a deep voice. It was Xiao Mufei.

"Among all the beasts in Qing-Yun Realm, this snake is far from the top league. In fact, it is even lower than average."

"However, the poison it carries makes it part of the top poisonous beasts."

"Whoever gets poisoned by it will die for sure. Even Dao Origin Stage cultivators wouldn't be able to survive its poison. The snake is just a third level beast. That means it's weak!" Xiao Mufei kept watching the snakes while he was speaking.

The disciples were listening to him while fighting the snakes.

"You may not be any outstanding cultivators, but you are all above Dream Origin Stage at least. Each of you can easily handle a level six beast. To kill this snake should be a piece of cake."

Xiao Mufei sounded heavy, but he was encouraging his men.

"Now, we have over three hundred brothers here. Even though we have to deal with a hundred thousand snakes, each of us only need to kill about three thousand. [1]"

Xiao Mufei continued, "We kept switching to defend the snakes,

so we have time to rest. We have been cultivating all our lives. This is just some stupid snakes. Do you really think we are unable to handle it? Hell no!"

The disciples were all inspired!

[That's right! There are many snakes indeed, but I just need to kill three thousand! Just sway the sword three thousand times. That's easy. We do more than that everyday in practice!]

Suddenly, everybody was thrilled. Their swords became brighter, moving faster and faster. Within just a while, the defense area expanded a hundred meters wide.

They started to cheer, as things finally went better.

Ye Xiao frowned. He moved close to Xiao Mufei and spoke quietly, "Elder Xiao, I am afraid there is something wrong with this. I don't think these snakes are easy to handle like this."

Xiao Mufei frowned and said, "Hmm? Why?"

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "I was observing the snakes and grabbed one to check its body... It is easy to handle when it is just one snake. Even I can easily kill it. All I need to do is try my best not to be poisoned. However, the scales are unbelievably tough. If we keep cutting it, it will consume more energy than we can afford. It will be easy to feel exhausted. Even though we take turns to fight, we may still not be able to clear it. Besides, it will eventually damage our weapons. If we die because of the loss of weapons, that will be such a shame."

...

[1] Tl note: I think it should be three hundred. :) Apparently not all Chinese are good at math.

Chapter 767: Golden Caruncle, the Weak Point!

Xiao Mufei was quite experienced. Of course, he knew what Ye Xiao said. However, it was urgent. He had to cheer his men up, so he didn't tell them the problem. He heard what Ye Xiao said and knew that Ye Xiao must have thought of a way to deal with the situation. His eyes lit up and he said, "Do you have any ideas then?"

Ye Xiao said, "I checked the snake earlier. Like all the snakes, the jugular is its weak point, but not the fatal one."

Xiao Mufei said, "That's right. That couldn't put it to death!"

"Hmm. We can constrain it by attacking its jugular, but not kill it."

"I am new to this world, so I barely know much about the animals here. However, I know one thing. Every living thing has a weak point that can lead it to death. As long as we find this weak point, it will be much easier to kill it." Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snake must also have a fatal weak point. That is the key we need to find out as soon as possible... I just don't know where it is..."

He continued, "Maybe we can ask our men to test it by attacking the snakes on different parts of their bodies. If we can find that weak point..."

Ye Xiao had made his point clearly enough.

Xiao Mufei was a clever man. He knew what Ye Xiao meant exactly.

That was right. This snake was extremely poisonous, but it barely appeared. Information about this animal was very small. Now, there were countless of this snake, so they had a lot of experiment subjects. The snake was dangerous, but it was not that strong. It shouldn't be a problem to find out the fatal weak point of

it. If they could figure out where to cut the snake to kill it easily, they could survive this ten times sooner!

Xiao Mufei understood it, so he turned around and gave the order.

"Try to attack the snake on different parts, like the neck, tail, head and others..."

Several level eight Dream Origin Stage cultivators answered and got back to the fight.

Their swords were moving with cold lights. A few snakes were killed. However, Ye Xiao urged, "Elder Xiao, I am afraid things are changing. Tell them to do it faster."

Xiao Mufei also noticed something was wrong.

The snakes seemed twice bigger than the former ones.

The snakes that showed up earlier were about two kilograms each, but the ones they were fighting now were about four kilograms. Some were even more than five kilograms!

The bigger snakes were not just bigger in size. The scales were brighter and tougher. To cut them into parts would cost more energy now.

It was getting more difficult now. The disciples were all stepping backward.

Suddenly, there came up a sound of cracking. One man had stricken on a snake with his sword. The snake was in pain and got hit off, but it didn't die.

The sword broke into two parts!

That man reacted quick. He turned around and left immediately. Another man took his place to continue the fight.

However, as the man spent time running over to fill the gap, a few others exclaimed. About seven men got bitten by the snakes and then died!

Xiao Mufei looked grieved. He watched his men fighting against the snakes. Ye Xiao was watching too. He hoped somebody would figure out the secret in the caruncle soon.

However, although they had killed hundreds of snakes within a short time, nobody ever tried the caruncle.

On one hand, the snakes surely would try to protect their caruncles.

On the other hand, none of the men thought of the caruncle!

Xiao Mufei was sweating.

He knew that his men were tired. Most importantly, some of them died. More and more would die. Those men must be frightened.

If things didn't go better, they would all die eventually!

Xiao Mufei was vexed and didn't know what to do. Suddenly, he heard Ye Chongxiao murmuring, "That's impossible. We tried every part of the snake. They must have a fatal weak point, right? Is Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snake a perfect creature? Silver scales protect the body. Golden caruncle... Wait... If there is any part of it we haven't tried to attack yet, it must be the caruncle..."

Xiao Mufei's eyes lit up. He shouted hurriedly, "Hit the caruncle! The caruncle! That's the weak point!"

He shouted repeatedly. A few Dream Origin Stage cultivators jumped up high and swayed their long swords with cold lights. - Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Suddenly, dozens of snakes that had been flying in the air got hit on the caruncles. They all fell down to the ground.

Green liquid poured out from the broken caruncles. As the caruncles were damaged, the snakes instantly died. That was efficient. The snakes didn't even twitch.

"The caruncle!"

"Hit the caruncle!"

Everybody heard it. They were thrilled again. They didn't fight hard anymore. What they did was to slip aside and cut the caruncles on the snakes' heads. After a while, the dead snakes piled up on the ground.

The snake bodies were about one meter high on the ground. More and more snakes died on it.

Now that they found the fatal weak point of the snakes, things got easier. Those men were all above Dream Origin Stage. They killed the snakes like cutting off grasses.

Xiao Mufei was relieved. He shouted and then tried to sweep off the dead snakes.

The snakes were dead, but the poison was still in their bodies. Whoever touched the poison would definitely die. They had been fighting so hard and didn't have time to deal with the dead bodies. Since the battle was safe on their side, he decided to clean the snakes himself!

[Those are good stuffs...]

Erhuo was jumping between Ye Xiao's legs, anxious for the snakes.

...

Chapter 768: Snake King!

Ye Xiao saw Xiao Mufei cleaning the snakes, so he said, "Elder Xiao, you are too important to do such a thing. Let me help. You have a group of men to lead."

He pretended to be humble and honest. He said, "I am weak. I can't help with the fight. I have been watching you guys here and couldn't do anything. It makes me feel bad. I just need to be careful about the poison when dealing with the dead snakes. I can do it. Just let me do something, please."

Xiao Mufei thought for a while and agreed with it. He should better keep an eye on the fight in case anything went wrong.

[Chongxiao asked the chance to make a contribution. What a good guy. He grabbed a dead snake because he wanted to figure out the weak point of it. I misunderstood him. It is reasonable that he wants to help. What he needs is just to be careful not to get poisoned. That should be safe...]

He nodded and said, "Alright. I will leave it to you. The snakes are dead, but the poison is still there. Just be careful. That aside, you must not go far. Stay inside our defensive perimeter."

Ye Xiao promised and then walked away.

He communicated with Erhuo with mind, "Erhuo, do you want the snakes?"

"Meow."

"Does it taste good?"

"Meow."

"Is it useful?"

"Meow."

"Really?"

"Meow meow!"

Ye Xiao understood.

He walked to the boundary of the defensive perimeter but didn't leave it. He then started to deal with the snake bodies. He reached his hand to the pile of snakes and then threw them high and far away. Nobody noticed that before the snakes were thrown away, some snake bodies disappeared. When the snake bodies flew out, it was hard to notice how many there were. In fact, many snake bodies were missing.

The little white cat was following him behind his back.

It kept walking around like doing nothing, but in fact it was eating the snakes. Nobody found out what they were actually doing.

That was reasonable. Who would think that a little cat had such an enormous stomach?

Maybe Erhuo was the peerless stomach king in the universe!

Ye Xiao quickly cleaned the bodies around the defensive perimeter, and then found that more dead snakes piled up again...

The pile of dead snakes was getting thicker and thicker...

Apparently, those men killed the snakes much faster now as they figured out they should hit the caruncle!

Ye Xiao kept cleaning the dead snakes faster and faster...

Xiao Mufei squinted at Ye Xiao from time to time. He wasn't watching him though. He just didn't want Ye Xiao to get poisoned. He would go over to help Ye Xiao if he got clumsy. However, when he found Ye Xiao was efficiently cleaning the snakes, he couldn't help himself from praising him.

[Ye Chongxiao is a good disciple. He fears neither hardship or tiredness... He just keeps doing his job...]

[Good lad!]

[He is calm and steady in such a chaos, and he is smart and sharp-minded. He will eventually become a great figure of Cold Moon Palace!]

Ye Xiao was satisfied.

There were tens of thousands of dead snakes in the Space already!

[Erhuo loves it. That means I should also take as many as I can. Things Erhuo likes... must be something extraordinary.] That was why he kept storing the snakes into the Space.

While the Cold Moon Palace people were winning the battle, the air suddenly smelled weird. Something happened. The whistling sound had stopped.

The snakes were still moving restlessly.

A beam of silver light was getting close to them. That was much brighter than the silver glow from the snakes!

It was like a silver moon splashing the lights to them...

The light was getting closer and closer...

Apparently, the main force of the Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snakes was coming over.

Among the sea of silver light, there was a bit of golden light moving over to them. It was like a king coming to the city!

The snakes were all lowering the heads!

"Snake king! It's their king coming!" Xiao Mufei was shocked. He was shaking. He was intense again.

Was the mythical Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snake King coming to them?

There were something Xiao Mufei didn't tell about the snake earlier. Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snake was, although a level three beast, the scales were the toughest shield they had. This was

something that would make the men lose courage, so he didn't tell the others.

Besides, the bigger snakes were actually level four beasts! The smaller ones were level three or lower. It depended on their age!

The snakes they were fighting at the last were all about level seven! Xiao Mufei recognized it with what he had learned in his life!

The snake king that made the other snakes lower their heads must be about level eight! That was horrible!

It could even be level nine!

That was a beast that most of the cultivators would run away from in Qing-Yun Realm!

At least, none of these people had the capability to deal with it!

That was why the man who had been making the whistling sound left. He must have noticed the appearance of the snake king. He had never thought this would draw the snake king out. He might get killed too if he didn't leave in time...

Apparently, he thought that the men of Cold Moon Palace here would definitely die!

As the snake king arrived, the snakes attacked more fiercely.

Although the men had known the weak point of the snake, they couldn't defeat them all in a short time. As the fight went on, many men died. People kept screaming painfully. Twenty men had died under the snake bites.

Somebody got bitten, but before he died, he rushed into the crowd of snakes to kill as many as he could. Hundreds of snakes were chopped apart before he lost his breath. When he eventually died, his body became just a heap of bones!

After a while, the bones were gone. He eventually became ashes and tracelessly flew into the air.

Chapter 769: Eliminate the King!

The horrible and cruel scene made these men tremble. They even felt weak on the hands and feet. Some of them started to throw up.

The hundreds of men were almost exhausted, since they had been fighting for such a long time. They were still sober, but they knew their arms were weak. They couldn't make any powerful strikes anymore.

More snakes were coming, like it would never end!

They knew the fatal weak point of the snake, but to kill at least one hundred thousand snakes was truly too much a challenge.

Even if the snakes just stay there to be cut off, these men would be tired to death!

It was an impossible mission!

Looking at the silver light, especially the golden light, Xiao Mufei was showing a weird look on the face.

"I have never thought that I would die in a beast's mouth. We are famous for our art of beast training. Is this what we deserve? For the sin we have done to living creatures?"

He sighed. However, his eyes started to become fierce.

He turned to Ye Xiao and said, "I will lead the men to rush out first. You should better stay in the center. Do not do anything stupid. We stay together and fight for a chance."

That was the last thing they could do.

It was like the ants holding together to cross the river. Maybe there would be some ants that would survive, but most of them would die in the water.

That was exactly what Xiao Mufei wanted to do.

That was a plan out of no plans!

He wanted to sacrifice most of his men, including himself, to keep Ye Xiao safe.

Even though there might be lots of fights ahead of them after the snakes, he had to make Ye Xiao survive this first!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He took in a deep breath and he felt a bit dizzy.

The poison was mixed with the air. It became denser and denser and Ye Xiao started to fall because of it.

He was only level three of Spirit Origin Stage, but he had East-rising Purple Qi, the marvelous martial art. He should have been impregnable to poisons, at least most poisons. However, the poisonous air made him feel dizzy. That was some strong poison.

That was reasonable. A level three snake that could kill Dream Origin Stage cultivators with its poison, which was the third poisonous creature in Qing-Yun Realm, it should be extraordinary. There were over one hundred thousand snakes around and over half of them were beyond level five beasts. The poison they set free to the air must be indefensible!

"We don't have to do that. There may be some other option," Ye Xiao said.

"Other option?" Xiao Mufei asked.

"Yes. Elder Xiao, you have seen the wolves, haven't you?" Ye Xiao said, "When I was traveling in the lower realm, I once encountered the wolves. They were in enormous number, just like the snakes here. Lots of wolves kept coming up to me. I fought against them day after night. The number of the wolves grew from hundreds to million. They fought together!"

"A million wolves..." Xiao Mufei took in a cold breath.

"That was the most dangerous fight I have ever gotten involved. It was not any superior cultivator I was fighting. The wolves were all weak. I can kill one by only a fist hit. However, no matter how

many of them died, the others would gather up immediately. I was excited at the beginning, but then became numb at the end. I fought with my instinct. That's all. The wolves were too weak, so none of them could successfully break my qi shield. Otherwise, I should have died long ago!"

"One of my friends came to me at the end. I was fighting like a mad man, following my instinct. If he didn't come to help me, I would die after using up all my energy!"

"He is weaker than me, but within a short time, he drove away all the wolves!"

"When I was sober again, he told me what he did. It is simple. He just killed the wolf king. After the wolf king died, the others all left!"

"It was horrible. The wolves fear nothing, not even death. They kept fighting. However, they had the biggest weak point." Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. "The king! As long as we find the king and kill it, the wolves will leave! We don't need to kill even one more."

"No exception."

"That I will never forget." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "What we are facing now is similar to what happened to me that day. I have been watching the snakes... When the snake king didn't show up, the whistling guided the snakes. The whistling shouldn't be able to draw out so many snakes."

"I guess they must have thrown something in this area that could lure the snakes. You know much more about beast training than I do. You must understand it."

"I doubt that the whistling was just showing them the direction... It couldn't control their attacks. That whistling isn't that powerful yet... We aren't even influenced a bit by that sound, so how could the snakes?"

"There must be something else that makes the snakes go crazy."

"Moreover, before the snake king showed up, these snakes fought one by one. They were just attacking, simply attacking. When the snake king showed up, the whistling disappeared, and the snakes became powerful and efficient."

"Besides... There is something else... The sound of the hissing..." He continued, "When they hissed, it sounded in a mess. It was like when a man was screaming with anger, he didn't know what he was saying."

"However, the hissing sounds orderly. It even follows a rhythm."

"I guess the snake king is commanding the fight."

"The snake king is apparently more terrible than than the whistling! However, it shows us the biggest weak point of the snakes. As long as we break it, we win."

Ye Xiao calmly spoke.

...

Chapter 770: Predicament!

Xiao Mufei's depressed eyes lit up. However, he was still waiting Ye Xiao to finish the talking.

"The conclusion goes to, we kill the snake king. The time we kill the snake king, the time we survive this chaos!" Ye Xiao thought for a while and drew a conclusion.

"Great!" Xiao Mufei raised his head and looked at the golden light far away. His eyes were filled with murderous qi. He seemed refilled with endless strength.

"I should do this myself!" He took a deep breath after thinking for a while.

"That snake king is something extraordinary. Elder Xiao, be careful." Ye Xiao nodded.

Among all the men there, only Xiao Mufei had the capability to kill that snake king.

The others would just go for a suicide mission!

Erhuo stayed beside Ye Xiao's feet, half-closing its eyes while staring at Xiao Mufei.

[Is he going to kill the snake king?]

"Gather over!" Xiao Mufei shouted, "Guys, keep the defense. Be careful! The snakes will not stop attacking! I will go to the snake king and return soon!"

After speaking, he jumped up to the sky. As he was still in the air, he drew out the long sword. A stunning move!

In the splendid shining lights, he started to spin with the long sword, as if he was a colorful cyclone. And then a thunder stroke!

- Shoot! - He rushed out so fast that no words could describe it properly.

That was incorporation of human and sword!

He was a master cultivator of Dao Origin Stage!

As he moved, thunders rumbled with him!

The sword light was spinning. It hit the air and made thundering sounds. Behind him appeared a dark hole. Xiao Mufei had already rushed out a hundred meters. Wherever he went over, the snakes were making shrill sounds.

What could be seen was endless pieces of the snakes that was torn by the spinning sword attack.

The human-sword incorporation attack of a Dao Origin Stage cultivator was truly overwhelming.

He killed the snakes like cutting off the grasses. He had reached the silver light already.

Over a thousand snakes died behind him!

The snakes on the snake king's side were horrible. There were hundreds of snakes and each of them was as thick as a barrel. The snakes saw Xiao Mufei flying to them, so they stood up and started to attack.

Xiao Mufei didn't retreat a bit. He shouted and then made a sword strike down with thunders and lightnings!

- Puff, puff, puff... -

Where the sword struck on, seven big snakes were torn into pieces, being stricken by the lightnings. Besides, dozens more big snakes were blown away by the power of the sword attack. A blank area was cleared up under Xiao Mufei's feet.

That was when he stood back on the ground again. He didn't lose alert though. He rushed forward without hesitation, pointing at a golden snake with his sword. The golden snake was a few hundred meters away. It was slim and the size of the arm of a girl!

The snake king!

The snake king noticed him. Suddenly, it started to hiss loudly.

The hundreds of big silver snakes suddenly all moved to it like crazy, from everywhere... They started assault Xiao Mufei at the same time!

One of the snake suddenly became bigger and then shot out a silver liquid in the air. It was like a shooting arrow moving towards Xiao Mufei.

Xiao Mufei was terrified. The poison of a normal Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snake could kill a cultivator below Dao Origin Stage. That big snake was definitely much stronger than the normal ones. The poison of it must be even more murderous. He was a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, but if he got hit by that silver liquid, he would very possibly die! Even if he survived, he would get seriously damaged. How could he allow that to happen!

He hurriedly moved aside. That poison liquid hit the ground and the leaves there suddenly started to make sound and emit smoke. After one second, the leaves rotted. The raw ground was shown. The earth of the ground appeared silver and it didn't stop smoking.

Xiao Mufei's legs were nearly cramped. He felt himself so lucky to dodge that poison attack... How vicious!

If he didn't react quick enough... If he got hit...

While feeling fortunate, countless big snakes had surrounded him. From time to time, there were poison liquid shooting to him. It was dangerous. Xiao Mufei had to keep moving away.

He didn't even dare to block the liquid with his sword.

He was afraid once his sword was hit by that poison liquid, it would be corroded! If he lost his weapon and had to fight with empty hands, it would be much more difficult for him!

However, because he was scrupling, he couldn't do his best to fight. Things went worse and worse for him. The snakes were like a snake mountain, blocking the way between him and the snake

king. The big snakes were surrounding it.

The snake king looked at Xiao Mufei. It was indifferent.

Xiao Mufei was a skillful and experienced man. He wouldn't be killed easily, but to escape the surrounding of the big snakes was another story. To kill the snake king seemed to be an impossible mission for him now.

As he fought, he was complaining.

[Why are these Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snakes... so tough?]

He could easily kill dozens of this snake of normal size by one sword attack. The big snakes were much stronger than the normal ones, but he was confident he could also kill them easily with his sharp sword. Besides, he knew the weak point of the snake, so he thought it would not be any difficult job to kill the snake king!

However, as he truly got on the fight, he found it was totally different. The truth wasn't like what he imagined. The first strike he made did kill lots of normal snakes, however, what happened next was completely out of his expectation!

Those big snakes were not so good at attacking. However, the silver scales gave them wonderful protection. He struck on one of the snake with full effort but still couldn't kill it!

That was not the most important thing. Every time when he tried to cut the caruncle, the snake would move its head away! If he was fighting just one of the snakes, he could make a second attempt and he would cut it. However, he was facing hundreds of them. There was no second chance for him. He had attacked so many times, but only successfully hit one. Even when he made this success, he nearly got bitten by the other snakes!

To damage the big snakes, he could use the human-sword incorporation attack again, but he needed to do that five times to wipe out the snakes. It wasn't easy to make that kind of attack. With the energy he had now, he could make two more human

sword incorporation strikes. That was the maximum! He couldn't defeat the snake mountain!

...

Chapter 771: Go, Erhuo, Go!

Xiao Mufei couldn't proceed with his plan to kill the snake king. Now, he was in trouble and didn't know how to get out of it. He was fine now, but as time passed, he might get exhausted!

The men saw Xiao Mufei got trapped, but there was nothing they could do to save him.

Xiao Mufei was the strongest among them all. He was the only one who could rush so far over the snakes. The others was unable to do so. The only thing they could do was to sigh!

At the moment, Ye Xiao tapped on Erhuo's head and said, "Erhuo, it's your time to show what you got. Go!"

Erhuo looked aside and made a sound proudly. "Meow!" It got down to the floor and made a stretch, before it walked out step by step in an elegant way.

The disciples of Cold Moon Palace were trying their best to defend the attack from the snakes. Some of them stayed in the center of the defense area to restore the qi and energy, but they still kept watching Xiao Mufei. Nobody noticed what Ye Xiao just did. If somebody saw him, they might scold him for playing with a cat at this moment when their master was in great danger!

Erhuo elegantly walked over a dozen steps out and then suddenly hunch-up its back. - Shoot! - It disappeared leaving a mass of white smoke.

A long white smoke was shooting towards the snakes fast.

After a second, Erhuo was about one meter away.

That was where there were most snakes and the most dangerous place. Erhuo just touched the floor and the snakes all moved over to it. Dozens of snakes started to bite it.

Erhuo could be swallowed by one snake, not to mention dozens of

them!

It stood there and didn't move a bit. It tilted its head looking at the snakes indifferently. Suddenly, it humphed with its wet nose.

"Humph! Mia!"

Its right claw pad hit the floor. - Pah! - Its half-closed eyes suddenly opened!

It burst out an enormous mass of qi towards the snakes.

After that, those snakes which had been surrounding Erhuo all moved backward like they all got stricken by lightning. The snakes from the distance were still moving closer to it, yet the close ones were moving outward!

The snakes kept getting closer like a mountain suppressing on the snakes around it. The snakes around it tried so hard to keep the other snakes away.

- Crack! Crack! - Too many snakes were getting close. Those around Erhuo were crashed!

However, even though those snakes' bones were cracked, they didn't move away a bit. They surprisingly formed a shield to defend Erhuo.

The snakes showed only fear in their eyes!

That was the fear for the upper level creature!

It was even more fearful than death!

Erhuo waved its tail and elegantly walked away.

Wherever it walked, the snakes made way for it.

That was such a marvelous scene to see!

At the moment, countless snakes stood up and moved aside. That made a small path for Erhuo!

Erhuo, a little cat the size of a man's hand, walked in the path casually and elegantly. It was so arrogant.

It happened so fast and nobody saw it. Otherwise, the men would have been shocked and their jaws would fall to the floor!

If Xiao Mufei saw it, he might cut off his own eyes because he wouldn't believe what he had seen. He was totally wrong about 'it is just a normal cat'!

The snakes that made way for Erhuo... their necks stayed the same shape. They didn't even dare to breath in front of Erhuo!

They all stood straight up and didn't move a bit like ice sculptures.

They might not be as respectful like this to the snake king!

Erhuo walked so arrogantly and elegantly! It looked so good!

As Erhuo walked away, the snakes finally got down to the floor. They didn't continue the attack, but just slipped away and hid in the bushes! They ran away from their battle!

Of course, they ran away! Nothing was more important than saving their own lives from that monster now!

The snakes attacked from everywhere like tides. People of Cold Moon Palace wouldn't have time to look at what happened on the little cat.

Ye Xiao had been watching Erhuo so he saw it.

However, the snakes blocked his sight, so he didn't see the whole thing happen. Otherwise, he would be impressed more about that little cat!

Nobody witnessed the glorious and great moment of Erhuo. What a shame!

Ye Xiao spoke to Erhuo with mind transmission, "The inner core of that snake king! Keep it for me!"

Erhuo was annoyed. "Mia!"

Apparently, it wasn't happy about Ye Xiao who did nothing but

asked for lots of things. However, he was its owner!

Far away from the defense area, many snakes suddenly fell down...

Apparently, Erhuo's angry shout scared some snakes to death for real...

"And the inner core of those big snakes! I want half of them!" Ye Xiao added.

"Mia!"

Erhuo was extremely angry about it.

"Damn you! I am working so hard here and you just do nothing but ask for a share!"

"And you only want the good ones! What the hell!"

"Can't you be just a little more reasonable?" Through mind communication.

"You are not working hard at all! No snakes dare to fight you!" Ye Xiao was indifferent. "Do not forget our deal! I got to eat whatever is good first! Not you! And hey, listen, there's a change. I want a bigger share of the big snakes' inner cores. Remember! Bigger share!"

Erhuo was furious. It rushed out fast.

[That... That is obviously bullying me!]

[But... so what? He is my owner. I can't change that. Fine. That is so annoying!]

...

Chapter 772: Silent Kill!

[It is impossible to vent my anger on him. Fine. Let me kill some stupid snakes. They are the reason why I got bullied by the bastard! And they actually dare to stand in my way! Don't you know I am really angry at the moment?]

Erhuo burst in anger. Its qi burst out like thunder. Hundred of snakes were stunned. They were too afraid to move. After Erhuo walked away, they were still there, not moving... They actually couldn't...

Xiao Mufei was fighting the snakes with all effort. He wanted to change the situation, but hundreds of level seven big snakes were surrounding him. Seven level beasts were just like Dream Origin Stage cultivators in human, definitely not in a high level though.

However, their defense was putting him in despair.

Besides, they had that murderous poison. Xiao Mufei was having a tough fight there!

He couldn't move as he wanted.

At the moment, as a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, he actually didn't notice a little white cat was walking casually over the snakes not far away from him.

...

Xiao Mufei was fighting with the crowd of snakes. He was the most sensitive to the situation of the battle. As he fought, he found the snakes were getting weaker.

At the beginning, he couldn't believe it. He thought the snakes were just preparing for a final attack or something. He kept watching the snakes carefully. However, after a while, he was sure the snakes were getting worse.

Some snakes started to look around, panicking.

Xiao Mufei was curious.

[We are having a fight here...]

[You actually didn't put me in your sight? I am a level two Dao Origin Stage cultivator!]

[You are so looking down upon me! Hmm. Fine. Just go look around at others. I may get a chance to rush out and kill that snake king, and finally finish this f*cking hopeless fight!]

However, things became even stranger next.

The big snakes had been fighting in high spirits, however, the next moment, they started to move backward and then lowered their heads while hissing...

After that...

- Shoot! -

All snakes ran away from the fight like running for their survival!

They were like... dogs that just got kicked on the asses.

Well, snakes weren't like dogs, but they acted like dogs...

Xiao Mufei had a feeling. The snakes were like a bunch of hooligans that found out the man they were fighting turned out to be the boss of their boss... and the boss of their boss could easily kill them all by just a cough!

Hmm... when the boss told them to run, they had to run. It was lucky to have their lives saved...

When Xiao Mufei made the next strike, he didn't hit anything, because there was no snake in front of him.

He was confused. [What the hell is happening?]

When he looked around, he found the snakes behind him also moved away...

The snakes kept running away.

Problem solved, in a weird way.

It was just like a joke to him, except it was not funny!

[Wait, there is one thing. It is not done with it alive, the snake king!]

Xiao Mufei thought of it and hurriedly rush towards the golden snake but only to find it gone.

[What?]

[Even... the snake king ran away?]

[So we are done here? It is done?]

[This is like a nightmare. And it is done now?]

Xiao Mufei was confused.

On the other side, the disciples of Cold Moon Palace suddenly felt relieved.

The snakes were all gone. Of course, they were relieved!

In the air, there was only the smell of blood and the fog.

What they could see were the dead snakes, no living ones.

Over a dozen of the men suddenly sat on the floor and couldn't get up anymore. The fight was over.

They had used up their energy. They had been fighting with the support of their spirits. As the fight was over, they couldn't move anymore. They just wanted to sit on the floor doing nothing but rest.

They didn't even want to move a finger.

They knew the fight was done, but it was finished in such an unbelievable way. They looked around and tried to figure out what exactly happened.

Behind the crowd, a small white little thing was quietly walking back to Ye Xiao.

It loathly put the thing in its mouth on Ye Xiao's hand. It was half of a golden snake body with a head. It sneered. "You snatch things from a little adorable cat... You are so... cheap..."

Ye Xiao was indifferent about it. He turned his hand and the golden snake head was put into his Space. He acted like nothing happened and knocked on Erhuo's head. "What else? Give me everything!"

Erhuo was sad.

[What are you? How do you know I am keeping something to myself. You have gotten the best one. Why can't you just leave me some? Why am I following such a curmudgeonly master?]

It opened its mouth and silver lights shot out of its mouth.

"You fool! Put them into the Space!" Ye Xiao pinched the wet nose of Erhuo and said, "Snake skin is old and stiff. How can you swallow that? You should eat that with the skin off. It would taste much better."

Erhuo heard that and felt it was reasonable. It crawled into Ye Xiao's clothes and disappeared. It entered the Space and spat out the dozens of big snakes into it...

Ye Xiao and Erhuo didn't know until now that it could enter the Space anytime it wished. Brother Egg had to get in and out the Space on Ye Xiao's will, but now it could get in and out by itself!

Erhuo was looking forward to the scaleless snakes Ye Xiao would make for it. It looked at the heap of dead snakes in the Space and felt so happy!

[So many food! Delicious food!]

[That is going to be a feast!]

[Meow meow!]

Chapter 773: Stockpile

When Erhuo thought about ripping the scale off all those snakes, it felt a headache. [I can't do that.]

[Well, it is good to have a master, considering this. Things I can't do, he will do it for me.]

[He can help me clean myself, flay my food, cook my snakes, and others. I can just focus on eating...]

[It's kind of good to have a master!]

[Just... Just leave some good stuffs for him.]

[Well, he wouldn't recognize any real good things...]

[All he wants is the inner core!]

[Humph. Stupid. You don't know the pure essence is much better than the inner core. Inner core... I really don't like it at all. It's useless!]

The snakes were gone, so the fight was over.

It came surprisingly, and went off surprisingly.

There were death. They fought hard. It was hard to explain how hard they had been through this!

They were all like waking up from a nightmare.

"What is it?"

"Why did the snakes go?"

"We were losing it. If they hold on for a few hours, we will all fall down. Why would they just go away?"

"That's weird. That doesn't make sense!"

In the air, there was the smell of the snakes and also the poison fog. However, the amount of the poison was limited. It won't hurt these people.

They were just confused about what just happened. They didn't know what exactly happened.

They were safe now, but things were unbelievable for them!

It was hard to understand human thoughts. They had just survived a disaster, yet they just felt incredulous!

"We don't have time for this. Just pack your stuffs and rush out of this bloody forest," Xiao Mufei shouted. "As long as the snake king is alive, they can come back anytime!"

The men were all frightened. They stayed together and rushed forward immediately.

They truly feared the horror of the snakes. They had survive it, but feared more for it!

"I mean... Those snakes. Their skins are so strong. What if we take them back and make them into armors? Would it be great?" Ye Xiao asked, "So we are going to leave them here? Isn't it quite a waste?"

"We are still unsafe. There is no time for that. Besides... the Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snakes belong to this place. They have a strong concept of territory. If we take the dead snake, they may rage up in fury. We may get ourselves killed. Just let it be. We should focus on keeping safe. Forget the other matters." Xiao Mufei looked at the snake bodies. He felt it a waste too.

[These snake bodies are wonderful materials. It is such a shame we have to leave them here.]

"Why don't we just take some?" Ye Xiao blinked. "If the snakes come again, we throw the snake bodies somewhere else to draw them away. If the snakes don't come back, we earn it. Both are good plans."

"That's true. Fine. Let's do it." Xiao Mufei nodded. "Everybody take two of the biggest snake bodies you can see into your space rings. Do it quick! Do it and we leave immediately!"

The men all went for the dead snakes.

Xiao Mufei didn't hesitate. He took four big snake bodies and took a breath out of relief.

He was the one who had been taking the most stress. He needed to watch the fight and guide his men on the fight, also to keep an eye on Ye Xiao so as to protect him. In the latter part of the fight, he fought against those big snakes alone. Although he was at Dao Origin Stage, it was too much for him. If the fight didn't end in such a weird way, he might have died. Now he could relax a bit!

Ye Xiao stayed beside him and didn't do anything.

"Why don't you take some?" Xiao Mufei was surprised.

Ye Xiao smiled humbly. "I don't have space ring... That is some marvelous thing for me... I guess I will just leave the snake bodies. You take it. It's fine. At least our brothers can have more good armors in the future... They may save some lives..."

For people in the lower realm, space rings should be something extraordinary. However, it didn't mean much for Xiao Mufei. He looked at Ye Xiao for a long time and sigh. He said, "You truly honor friendship. You don't even want such precious things... What an honest, humble, and honorable man..."

Ye Xiao smiled humbly.

Well, what he had done never described him as honest, humble or honorable at all...

[I do want to take more of the snakes too. My Space already has over a hundred biggest snakes... the best ones...]

[Those snake skins are all in my place... I don't want those you guys are picking...]

[You think they are precious? They are not for me. I don't want it. I didn't give it up because of any virtue you said!]

"Don't worry. When we return to our sect safely, you will get

your snake skin armor!" Xiao Mufei promised him.

They finished taking the snakes and rushed off in the forest.

Ye Xiao followed the men and did nothing else. Erhuo was doing something else. It ran away from Ye Xiao to the heap of snakes...

Those were good food for it. Even a landholder didn't have that much food storage. It started to store as many as it could!

After a while, Ye Xiao felt like there was a heavy rain in the Space. The dead snakes kept falling into the Space and made a small mountain there...

Erhuo was making a stockpile of food in it...

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Erhuo you idiot. You are so greedy. That is so cheap. Do you have to do things like this?]

It was still 'raining' in the Space...

Ye Xiao was confused. [There are many dead snakes indeed, but this many? What?]

He entered the Space to check on it and what he saw nearly made him pass out.

Some snakes were alive...

Some were those level seven big snakes!

He didn't know how Erhuo did it. It actually put so many living snakes into the Space!

[What the hell are you doing? Are you moving the whole clan of the snake into our Space?]

[You want to eat them all out? Extinct them?]

[Can't you stop being so mean?]

Ye Xiao didn't really care about that though. He was just confused. How did Erhuo defeat those huge beasts with such a

small body?

He knew Erhuo wasn't anything ordinary, and he also knew that it might be rather powerful. When it was Brother Egg, it was already doing unbelievable things. However, to capture those snakes alive and put them into the Space... that was way out of his expectation!

...

Chapter 774: Another Ambush!

Even Ye Xiao couldn't put living things into the Space, yet Erhuo could. It actually put so many living snakes into the Space. It didn't have any limits! Ye Xiao was definitely shocked!

The next moment, Erhuo quietly entered the Space.

Ye Xiao found Erhuo could freely get in and out the Space earlier and got to know why.

Erhuo was born along with this Space. It was totally free to enter this place, more than Ye Xiao.

When it was Brother Egg, because of the eggshell, it couldn't get through the bound of the Space. Only Ye Xiao could take it in and out. When it killed Gu Jinlong, Ye Xiao got into the Space and took it out. Otherwise, even when Brother Egg wanted to help, it couldn't get out the Space. Now it was free. Erhuo could enter the Space and take anything it wanted into the Space!

Ye Xiao still owned the Space. If he closed the Space, Erhuo couldn't get into it either.

Now was the time Ye Xiao felt like closing it. [You take some dead snakes back, fine. You need food. Why do you take these living snakes back? Living snakes? So is it living fish next time?]

Erhuo didn't understand why he would be upset. After taking back hundreds of living snakes into the Space, it got into the Space and walked around the snakes.

The living snakes just lied on the ground shaking. None of them dared to do anything.

Erhuo walked around and meowed. Dozens of the snakes started to follow its instructions, standing, curling, lining up, crawling, moving fast, moving faster...

It was training the snakes like training soldiers...

It was having fun there.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What the hell? What is that?]

After a while, Erhuo was finally bored. It waved its claw and the snakes finally could have some rest. It hadn't been long, but the snakes were tired like hell. The snakes hissed and then went to the Wood Space themselves.

They just lied under the Tree of Cultivating Tea.

Ye Xiao was annoyed. [Little bastard. Where do you think it is? Penitentiary? How can you raise your pets here? You are a pet yourself! ...]

The snakes seemed obedient though. Ye Xiao didn't say anything. He thought, [Maybe... someday... the snakes can fight for me? Right. Living snakes can be taken into the Boundless Space. What about living man? I have to make some test!]

The hundreds of men kept walking fast in the Dark Pine Forest. They had been worrying about the return of the snakes, however, nothing happened. They finally felt relieved.

Some of them started to gloat.

There were so many dead snakes in their space rings.

Xiao Mufei told them to take only two, but they didn't listen to him. They wouldn't give up the chance to take as many precious materials as they could!

Those were such marvelous things that might save their lives in the future. To wear an armor which was made with this snake skins meant being invulnerable.

Xiao Mufei told the others to take two, but he himself took four big snakes. That was why the others dared to take more!

Everyone had about four dead snakes in the space ring. Even Fang Dalong, who respected his master the most, took three!

They had lost many brothers in that fight, but they had so many dead snakes now. That must be a blessing after the catastrophe.

They had only heard about Silver-scaled Golden-caruncle Snakes. Even though there was people who killed a snake, he just took away the poisonous liquid. Nobody dared to take the skin, because nobody dared to take the risk. Once somebody took the dead snake, the living ones might rage up to revenge.

However, they had taken so many, but no snakes came after them.

That was such a blessing!

They all felt high-spirited and vigorous.

They had passed half of the Dark Pine Forest. Nothing happened. No snakes, no other enemies. It seemed the other sects were gone, believing these men must have died under the attack of the snakes...

Nothing happened to them again.

They felt even more relieved now.

Even Xiao Mufei had slightly relaxed after being safe for about six days.

However, he felt pain in his temples.

He knew why. He had used too much of his spiritual power earlier. That was normal after effect.

However, if he forcibly ignored it, it might cause a negative impact on his future cultivation. It seemed safe for them now. He thought there was no reason to push himself too hard. Thus, he told everybody to slow down and take some rest, so as to restore the energy.

It was a flat area they were headed to in the Dark Pine Forest.

There were some places the pine trees were not so dense.

There would be sunlight shining into the forest. It would make it look better, like a beautiful scenery.

Somebody smiled and said, "It looks like a good place for a man to live in seclusion. Nice place to mould one's temperament."

"That's right. When we have nothing to do, we should probably find a place like this to spend the rest of our lives. That would be nice," another man said.

The small hill in front of the men might not be special in other places, but in the wide and boundless dark forest, it was great.

When they were having a rest, everybody was interested with this place. They teamed up and went up to the hill.

Even Xiao Mufei smiled for the first time since they entered this forest.

However, at this moment!

Something happened!

Suddenly, it started to smoke on top of the hill. There were a few holes showing up on the floor. Dozens of men in black jumped out of the holes like ghosts. The sky suddenly became dark again!

It was darker than the night!

Dozens of men in black shot out countless of cold stars [1] covering the sky!

That brought the shadow of death!

...

[1] Cold star, must be some kind of hidden weapons like Ye Xiao's needles.

Chapter 775: Real Killing Strike!

The few who were walking in the front didn't have time to react. Before they could do anything, they already became hedgehogs, stabbed by countless Coldstars.

Till they died, their faces still looked happy as they finally saw the sunlight in the forest.

"Defense!"

Xiao Mufei widely opened his eyes and shouted. At the same time, he pushed Ye Xiao down on the floor. Then he jumped up so high to make a strike with his sword. His sword light shot out and became a light net moving to those Coldstars.

However, it was too late.

People kept exclaiming in pain.

In the area of attack of the coldstars, many Cold Moon Palace people were shaking, twitching, moaning, exclaiming and falling to the floor.

Those men in black who had suddenly showed up from the holes on the floor were fully covered, only revealing their eyes. They looked dark, cold and vicious.

After that first coldstar attack, they made the second one without any hesitation. They didn't stay to check how their attack went, but just left immediately!

They all hid into the forest!

One hit and then left!

"Where are you going!" Xiao Mufei was furious. With a sound of explosion, his sword light had rushed out like a shooting star.

If he just let those men leave, he was never going to find out who attacked them. His men would die for nothing. Xiao Mufei couldn't accept that, so he swayed his sword and went after them!

In Xiao Mufei's mind, the men in black attacked in such an organized method, so they must have had their own strategy in doing this. They took the first step and he was responding. He had no idea whether he could catch up with them. He wanted to get them, so he aimed at the several men who were closest to him.

However, they reacted so fast. One of them suddenly swayed his sword with light. It was like the moon rushing over with glow around the attack. It hit on Xiao Mufei's sword light.

- Clang! -

A loud noise was made. That man humphed and flew away, but spat out blood in the process. He coughed and said, "Good dog of Cold Moon Palace. Xiao Mufei, the Mountain Hack, you are indeed impressive!"

Xiao Mufei was shocked. Although he won the combat and didn't get hurt at all, he was slowed down by that attack. He had lost the chance to catch up with those men. They all flew into the forest and disappeared, except that man who got injured.

Xiao Mufei shouted with anger, "What dog? Don't you think you should be loyal to your own sect too? I dare you!"

That man sneered, "I don't know! We are of no sects. Loyalty means nothing to us!"

Xiao Mufei was furious. "Take off your mask and show yourself! Let me see whether you are in a sect or not!"

He thought only the other six great sects would attack them in this forest!

Yet that man said he wasn't of any sect. Xiao Mufei was pissed!

That man sneered, "Why do you think I should listen to you? You can come and try to take it off me if you can? What? If a sword and both your hands are not enough, maybe you can use your mouth too, doggy!"

Suddenly, that man waved his hand and made a blast of dark smoke. Xiao Mufei was going to rush over to get him, yet there were thousands of tiny needles flying out from the dark smoke!

That blocked the way.

Xiao Mufei didn't panic. He swayed his sword and hit off all the needles in the air. None of the needles hurt anybody. However, the man was gone.

There were only dead bodies of the men of Cold Moon Palace on the hill.

There were about eighty of them who died!

Xiao Mufei looked at those bodies and shouted with fury, "If you want to do anything, why not just come down and fight me! You can do anything once I'm dead! We are all people of noble sects. Why do you have to play such a dirty trick?"

His shrill voice sounded out.

It reverberated among the mountains, but there was no response.

The wind blew his clothes up. He stood on top of the hill, holding his sword which was stuck on the floor. He looked desolate!

"Can they be saved?" Xiao Mufei looked at the men who were checking on the bodies.

"I'm afraid not..." The men were all angry and sad.

"Those are flying weapons, stricken out by level nine Dream Origin Stage cultivators... There is poison on the coldstars." Fang Dalong angrily spoke, "Those bastards. Why are they so vicious! They are people of noble sects. How can they use such dirty methods! Vile! Shameless!"

Xiao Mufei checked on the dead bodies. He stayed silent.

The coldstars nearly hit through the bodies. Those men must be strong. There was poison too!

Apparently, those men just wanted them to die!

That was vicious!

"Seven sects are bonded. Three factions are brothers..." Xiao Mufei laughed loudly, "Hahahahaha... Think about it. Isn't it ironic?"

When Ye Xiao stood up, everything was done.

He could see nothing else but the horrible scene with blood and flesh!

Three of the men who originally stayed with him died!

There were lots of blood and flesh. Ye Xiao's eyes became cold, and so was his face.

[Saint Sunlight Sect! Saint Starlight Sect!]

[You just did more sin!]

[These people are from Cold Moon Palace. They are my enemies too. But they died for me today!]

[I didn't kill them, but they died for me!]

"Let's move!" Xiao Mufei shouted, "How can cultivators cry with tears like this? Martial man dies in the martial world! Bury them as we always do in martial world! Just take the chance to avenge them. That's what we are going to do."

"You gave me one thing, I will return two. You killed one of my men, I will kill everyone in your family!" Xiao Mufei shouted to the sky, "Listen, bastards! I know who you are! You should better not let any of us return to our sect! Because that will be the beginning of your nightmare!"

"Move! Fast!"

"Let's go!"

Xiao Mufei shouted.

At the moment, Ye Xiao felt itchy on the head. He felt terrible.

Hairs on his skin stood up. He didn't even think before he hurriedly got down on the floor fast.

- Shoot... -

A stream of light that suddenly shot over from the behind!

It was aimed at Ye Xiao!

...

Chapter 776: Assassination Attempt and Assassinating!

That was a fast moving dark light! It seemed to gather all the darkness in the night, quiet and traceless.

That was a killing strike!

Ye Xiao sensed something wrong, so he just got down following his instinct. If he turned to run away when he discovered that light, he would have died!

That dark light brushed pass his head! - Shoot! -

That was some lightning fast hidden strike. It had aimed at Ye Xiao and apparently was going to kill him instantly!

At the same time, with a thundering sound, Xiao Mufei furiously rushed out. His sword lights went out like storm. Within seconds, he had rushed into the forest, and after that, a series of blasting sounds came out!

Sounds of fighting came out from behind the trees. After a while, somebody exclaimed and everything became silent again.

Xiao Mufei was covered with murderous qi while holding a human head in his hand. He rushed back from the forest and threw the head on the floor.

That head rolled for some distance and then the face showed up. It was full of terror and fear.

"Isn't this Ma Dingding from Saint Sunlight Sect?" Fang Dalong shouted out loudly with anger, "I know him! He is an assassin! He is one of them! Soul Hunter Sword! He barely showed himself in the battle, so it was indeed Saint Sunlight Sect!"

Xiao Mufei showed a cold face and said, "Good. Dalong, put this head away! This is evidence! Saint Sunlight Sect is shameless. They broke the vow and sent assassins to us. We are going to sort things

out with them sooner or later!"

He paused and continued, "Those men in black fought with lights like stars. They must be Saint Starlight Sect! This Ma Dingding is Saint Sunlight Sect. Two sects together... Haha... Brother sects indeed!"

In fact, he was still in shock.

The two attacks did such a great job working by turns. The flying Coldstars were just to draw the attentions, and the real killing strike was actually Ma Dingding!

What they wanted was just to kill Ye Chongxiao.

Ma Dingding was a lot weaker than Xiao Mufei. If he fought Xiao Mufei face to face, he would definitely lose it. However, he was at the top level of Dream Origin Stage, one step away from Dao Origin Stage. He was great at instant kill!

He never thought that he would fail to kill a man who had just come to this world from the lower realm. He was a bit lost because he couldn't believe he would miss, so he didn't run away in time.

If he made a quicker reaction and left fast, nobody could easily get him in this dark forest. After all, he had been an assassin for his whole life.

He might not be able to defeat Xiao Mufei, but it wouldn't be difficult to escape!

Ye Xiao was so close to death. He sweated!

[That... was close!]

[So close!]

He touched his head and held a curl of his hair in his hand. That attack didn't kill him, but it did cut off some hair off his head. Luckily, he got down fast, and only his hair was hit.

He looked at the dagger with blue glow. Even a fool could see the poison on it!

If it truly cut Ye Xiao, not to mention the poison, the sharpness and power of that flying dagger could have gotten him killed. It was a strike from a Dream Origin Stage cultivator. Ye Xiao was never going to survive that!

He gritted his teeth as he angrily muttered, "Saint Sunlight Sect!"

[I am never going to forget about this!]

[You better wait and see what I will do to you!]

Xiao Mufei led the rest of them running ahead again, day and night. They were running in their extreme speed and already rushed out two thousand miles!

They had been attacked another three times, however, Xiao Mufei didn't let the enemies do anything. He just rushed out and killed ahead before they could do anything.

They fought and ran. Even though Xiao Mufei was fighting so hard, they still lost over fifty more men. However, the enemies didn't take any advantage on the fights either. They also left dozens of dead bodies.

When they were about to get out of the Dark Pine Forest, there seemed to be no more enemies.

When they left the forest and saw the barren hills in front of them and the cooking smoke far away, they felt like they were living a totally different life.

Only one hundred and seventy-three survived!

One hundred and ninety were buried in the Dark Pine Forest!

The first thirty men died under the bites of the snakes. The others were all assassinated!

Xiao Mufei's face had been dark along the way.

It was such a great loss. It was the biggest loss for Cold Moon Palace since Xiao Monarch died!

"There is a village there. There are no hostels, but they do have a public house." Xiao Mufei pointed ahead and said, "Send two men there and tell the house there will be over one hundred and seventy men to be eating in their place. Tell them to prepare."

A small public house in a small village? How do they prepare for such a feast?

If nobody told them in advance, they could never be able to bring up food for over one hundred men.

The two disciples took the order and rushed away to the public house. The rest of them were moving so slowly, in fact they it was the slowest movements they made in their lives. They wanted to have their food as soon as they got to the village.

"You lazy ones. You are clever. You'd rather waste time here walking than face an empty table." Xiao Mufei actually smiled. "Am I right?"

Ye Xiao smiled too.

That was common sense.

No matter how tiring it was to walk on the way, at least they had things to do and had a destination to reach. It was better than just sitting there.

Of course, because there were too many people, if they got to the public house and turned out to not even chair to sit on, it would be frustrating.

It was only over a dozen miles. If they ran fast, it would only take the time for half a pot of tea of tea to boil. However, they spent three hours on the road.

Such a long time, they could have crawled to the village within such a long time. Yet they walked.

They walked so unbelievably slow that they were even a bit lost now.

They seemed to forget the fights they had been through and the brothers that had died earlier.

In fact, they didn't. Their eyes were red and their hearts were full of hatred. They didn't forget it. They just didn't want to mention it.

...

Chapter 777: A Moment of Peace!

When over one hundred men rushed into the village, the natives didn't just watch them.

There was a kid who showed up inside the door to look at them, but soon a woman dragged him back into the house and slammed the door. There was a voice scolding the kid afterwards, "Little bastard! Do you want to lose your life? They are all..."

Xiao Mufei saw it and sighed. He didn't know what to do though.

What he did was slowly and quietly walk to the small public house.

When Ye Xiao went pass the house, he happened to see the kid. That kid was wearing a pair of shoes that were so worn out and his toes were sticking out of the shoes. He was shocked.

He waved one hand and a few gold leaves flew into the house with shiny glow.

"Buy the kid a new pair of shoes," Ye Xiao spoke gently.

It was only a few gold leaves. That was all.

There were so many gold and silver in his Space. It should be enough for a kingdom to use for about a year. However, he couldn't give the kid more. A few gold leaves were already more than enough. It might be valueless to cultivators like him, but for the poor family, it was enough to cover their life expenses for several years. It should be just the amount they could handle. If he gave them more, they might be killed for it.

In the house, the mother said thank you in a shivering voice.

"I should have known you have such a kind heart. You are from the lower realm. I thought you have long become indifferent to these things. I really didn't know," Xiao Mufei said.

"It just reminds me of my life. When I was a kid, my life was just

like that kid's. No. Mine was worse. He has a mother who loves him. I didn't," Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while and then answered.

Xiao Mufei sighed. He tapped on Ye Xiao's shoulder and didn't say anything more.

He could tell that Ye Xiao was telling the truth from the bottom of his heart. It was never faked!

Obviously, in both of Ye Xiao's life, he had childhoods both worse than the kid's. He had never experienced the love of his mother. To be compared to that kid, he lost a big one!

It was all from deep inside his heart. Of course, he was honest about it!

The public house couldn't prepare enough food for the men, but since they were informed early, they had already sent people to buy food from the town.

If the public house did suddenly have enough food for so many people, the public house must be a trap!

The man of the public house had gone to about seven shops to buy enough teapots. Thus, over one hundred men could finally drink some hot tea.

The public house could never boil enough water in time for all these men, but they asked the neighbors to boil more for them. They had to use the kitchen mainly on cooking!

They didn't have enough chairs for these people, so some of them sat around one table, and the others all just sat on the floor. They had been traveling for days. To have a proper meal was all they needed now. They didn't care about chairs at all.

Ye Xiao did a counting. There were one hundred and seventy-two men. Only Xiao Mufei, Ye Xiao and two old men who were about fifty-five years old were sitting on the chairs around the table.

The others all sat on the floor in sixteen groups.

There were three groups sitting in a triangle around the table. They were the nearest to the table. Four groups sat farther in four directions, east, south, west and north. Each group was led by one of the four eldest disciples.

The rest nine groups sat farthest in a circle surrounding the four groups.

Each group was ten meters away from another.

Three stars guardian array.

Four sides iron barrel array.

Nine squares ambush array!

Three formation arrays bonded together. Where Ye Xiao and the other three were sitting was the center of the three arrays. Xiao Mufei was sitting at the center. He was the eye of the arrays.

Where he sat gave him a broad view. He wouldn't miss anything. Anybody who showed up or anything that happened around them, Xiao Mufei could notice in time.

These men were obviously unbelievably cautious during the time they were on the way back.

At the beginning, there were people drinking tea and having some leisure chat. Some would burst in laughters. However, as they moved further, nobody talked anymore.

Some people started to look around.

Some lowered their heads and drank the tea. Some of them drank the tea but didn't know that their tears had dropped in to the tea they were drinking.

[When I came, somebody sat beside me...]

[Now that man is dead. I am never going to meet him again.]

[There is nothing I can do. There is nothing I can say. What I can do is to drink up the tea along with my grief and anger.]

It was getting more and more depressing.

It drove people crazy!

The owner and the waiter had been trying so hard not to tremble. They tried to boil the water and made the food like they did everyday...

Five carriages were moving slowly towards them. There were water, liquor, food in them...

Their special customers were all just watching the carriages. Nobody talked.

They were starving.

They still had the food they had prepared to eat on the way. However, when Xiao Mufei told everybody there was a public house in the village ahead of them, nobody wanted to eat the terrible food anymore. They just wanted to have a good meal!

Before they had the meal, they felt like they could eat up a bull. They decided to eat as much as they could later. However, when they were about to get the food they had been thinking of, they lost their appetite.

The reason was simple. They lost too many brothers... Those who died never needed to eat anymore.

Thinking about that, nobody had the mood to eat anything.

They just quietly sat there, waiting and watching...

The smell of the delicious dishes spread out.

The liquors were brought out and given to them.

They were served with lots of plates of beef first.

Liquor and beef. What a match!

Xiao Mufei sighed. He held the bowl of liquor and splashed it on the floor. "Kids, rest in peace! Grudge in the martial world! Debts will be paid!"

"We will avenge you! They owe you!"

All the others raised up the bowls and shouted with red weeping eyes.

One hundred and seventy-one bowls of liquor were splashed on the floor at the same time.

The smell of liquor spread out. It spread to the end of the world with sorrow!

...

Chapter 778: Weird Carriage!

"Let's eat!" Xiao Mufei took a deep breath, closed his eyes and then suddenly shouted!

"Eat!" The others all picked up their chopsticks.

However, many of them had their tears dropping down into the bowls when they lowered their head to drink it up. They kept pouring the liquor to the bowls and dropping their tears in it, then drank up...

Nobody raised their heads, because none of them wanted to be found out weeping.

Nobody sobbed, because it was too obvious.

However, it felt much worse than bursting into tears.

The only sound that could be heard was the sound of them chewing.

...

At the moment, one more carriage was moving over in a regular speed.

It was an old carriage. The wheels seemed broken, so it moved jerkily. The curtains in the carriage were rubbishy. That must have been cut by some sharp weapons.

There were blood marks too.

Apparently, it was a carriage that had experienced something terrible.

The carriage stopped not far away from the people. The horse suddenly neighed and got down the floor with its knees. The carriage fell down, and there came an exclamation.

An old man crawled out of the carriage. His face was pale and his chest was all red. He was bleeding on the chest...

He coughed out a full mouth of blood and curled on the floor, trembling.

A young girl got out the carriage too and called the old man. She was panicking. "Uncle Gao! Uncle Gao..."

The girl saw the the old man's wound. She didn't know what to do as she just held the wound with both of her hands. Blood came out between her fingers. She couldn't stop the bleeding.

She panicked and shouted, "Somebody! Come save my Uncle Gao... Please... Somebody come help us... Oh..." She sobbed.

She was in despair. She burst in tears, which continuously poured on her cheeks. Tears kept dropping down...

Everybody else sighed in the heart. [What a miserable world. Such a piteous family...]

Xiao Mufei looked at them and then continued the meal indifferently.

"Rongrong... Don't cry..." The old man was still bleeding. He coughed, reached out a hand and fondly spoke, "I am afraid I am not going to make it... You... You must take care..."

"No! No, no, no! You will be okay, Uncle Gao..." the girl cried while holding the old man.

"No..." The old man sighed. "Rongrong... I am worried... You are going to live alone..."

The girl just cried.

"Listen. No matter what happens, you must remember this. The last thing I am telling you..." The old man breathed with difficulty and said, "Rongrong... Remember... No matter when, you must not... not... beg!"

The girl was sobbing and nodding. Her skinny body was shaking. She was going to pass out at any second.

Road from the old days, broken carriage, dying man and a lonely

girl...

Many disciples saw it. It reminded them their departed brothers, so they felt their grief again...

Xiao Mufei suddenly shook. There was a sense of confusion in his eyes.

You must not beg!

It was like a lightning striking right in his heart!

"Rongrong..." Xiao Mufei sighed and murmured.

Suddenly, he stared at that girl.

That girl was just moaning. She heard Xiao Mufei and slightly turned over her face and wiped the tears on her face. Xiao Mufei saw her side face.

As he saw her face, he was suddenly shocked as if he had just got stricken by a lightning.

He suddenly stood up and walked fast to the girl.

He walked to the girl and said to her in a low voice, "Your name is Rongrong?"

It seemed he was questioning her.

Ye Xiao was confused. He looked at Xiao Mufei with confusion. He knew Xiao Mufei was never going to help others!

Xiao Mufei showed indifference to it and that was what he would usually do. Why would he suddenly do this?

The girl and that old man showed up in such a special time. It was weird. What happened felt like acting. It was unreal. Xiao Mufei actually had no suspicion on that.

[What is going on?]

The girl was still sobbing. She lowered her head as if she panicked because a strange asked her a question. She looked scared and didn't answer him.

Her hair hung down and covered half of her face. That made her look more piteous.

Xiao Mufei sighed and asked her again, "Your name is Rongrong, right?"

He sounded gentler.

That girl finally answered, "Yes..."

Her voice was shaking. She still didn't raise her head. She was scared.

"Raise up your head and let me look at you." Xiao Mufei softly spoke to her, "Maybe I can help."

As he said so, his disciples were shocked.

[What? Xiao Mufei? He is actually being so gentle to somebody else than us? No. Even when he speaks to us in a caring way, I can still feel that he wants something. He... why would he be so honest and gentle to that girl? What... What is this?]

That old man's eyes lit up. His eyes were actually filled with joy and comfort. He tried to say something, "Rongrong. Rongrong... You... Quick... Say thank you to this honorable man... He... He can..."

He then coughed with a full mouth of blood again. He couldn't even speak smoothly. The more eagerly he wanted to speak, the worse he coughed. At the end, he couldn't even breathe. After coughing heavily, he passed out with his eyes rolled up.

"Uncle Gao..." the girl exclaimed. She held the old man and cried. "Uncle Gao... Don't go... Don't leave me alone... I am scared..."

"Uncle Gao... I have no families in the world... Oh... Please don't leave me... I will listen to every word you say... I won't beg..."

The girl was in such a great grief and she nearly passed out.

When Xiao Mufei heard her, his face started to twist with sorrow and struggle.

Chapter 779: Let Her Go!

Xiao Mufei gently said, "He won't die so soon. Girl, are you Rongrong? Rong... Rongrong, come here, let me have a look at you."

When he called her Rongrong, his voice was shaking.

The girl raised up her head and kneeled to him, holding his legs and cried with her face up, "Please... Please... Save my Uncle Gao... He doesn't want me to beg... But I don't want him die... I am begging you..."

Xiao Mufei finally saw her face.

His eyes suddenly opened up widely. Deep inside his eyes, there was confusion. He finally couldn't stop shaking...

That girl's face was like a lightning striking into the weakest and most painful part of his heart.

He felt like his heart was bleeding. He felt the pain in it.

With tears in his eyes, he murmured, "Rongrong... Good girl... It is you? Is this real?"

He bent down to hug her.

At this special moment, the girl's eyes, which were full of tears, were suddenly filled with murderous intent. Two streams of cold light shot out from both herhands and got through Xiao Mufei's legs...

That old man rolled over to him too and two cold lights showed up in his hands. He suddenly struck on Xiao Mufei's chest with both hands!

At the same time, the girl stepped back a bit and lowered her head quickly. Countless of black lights shot out from her dark hairs to Xiao Mufei's face!

Xiao Mufei seemed lost in the memory, but he closed his eyes

under the instruction of his instinct. He reached out both hands and grabbed the swords from the old man. He suddenly leaned backward, as if his body was bent!

As he bent his body, the murderous attacks flew over his face and didn't hurt him.

However, he didn't escape the mass of needles with dark lights. Those were exactly aiming at him.

The needles all hit on his body, chest, waist, and legs.

Xiao Mufei shouted loudly and energized his fists. Both of the old man's swords were broken! He then reached a hand to grab the old man on the neck, shouting at him, "Give me the antidote!"

The wounds on his legs weren't that serious. The needles hit on his chest, but it didn't go deep. However, he felt itchy and painful on the wounds. That meant their weapons were poisonous.

Xiao Mufei was such an experienced man. He instantly operated his spiritual qi to block the veins around the wounds, so as to suppress the efficacy of the poison. However, he still felt itchy. That must be some extraordinary poison. Even a Dao Origin Stage couldn't completely suppress it down.

Even so, Xiao Mufei was still able to restrain the girl and the old man at the same time. He could have killed them right away, but he didn't attack the girl, only attacked the old man.

There was grief and pain deep in his eyes.

That old man was grabbed on the neck. His neck was cracking in Xiao Mufei's hand, but he still sneered in a vicious way, "Antidote huh? Come get it from me then, if you can catch up with me."

Then he tilted his head. Some black blood came out from his mouth, nose, eyes and ears. He died. He knew he wouldn't survive this, so he bit the poison capsule in his mouth to kill himself.

The old man died, but his eyes were still staring at Xiao Mufei

with joy and viciousness.

He died, but a Dao Origin Stage cultivator was dying with him!

Xiao Mufei was going to die too!

All his disciples were shocked and they gathered over to him.

Many people surrounded the girl with murderous qi.

"Give me the antidote!" Everybody was vexed. Xiao Mufei's face was turning darker now.

Everybody knew he would die soon without the antidote!

If Xiao Mufei died, the one hundred and seventy men would never be going to make it back alive.

That girl stood there gasping. Suddenly, she giggled and vilely spoke, "You won't get it, even if you kill me! That is Nine Determination Dark Poison! Anybody who thinks he can save him, go try it!"

The others were all stunned!

"Hahahaha... There is no antidote for this poison!" The girl laughed crazily. "I came here today, with a plan of death. To die with such a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, I kind of feel happy."

She didn't stop laughing, but in her eyes, there was sorrow.

Who would want to die if there was a chance to live?

However, she knew she was going to die. No matter who, nobody could stay alive after messing with Cold Moon Palace! She was just a Dream Origin Stage assassin after all. What she needed to do was to kill Xiao Mufei. Whether she made it or not, she had to die!

"I am going to kill you!" Fang Dalong felt grieved and angry at the same time. He shouted loudly with tears in his eyes. He had grabbed the long sword and was about to strike it down.

That girl closed her eyes and didn't move a bit.

"Stop!" A shout full of anger reverberated. Xiao Mufei suddenly

stood up and shouted, "Don't kill her!"

"Master!" Fang Dalong burst in tears. "Why not?"

Xiao Mufei's face was getting darker. When he looked at that girl, there was no hatred in his eyes. He still looked at her fondly. Even with two daggers stabbing his legs, he still walked over. Every step, blood came out from the wounds.

He acted like nothing was happening on his legs. He just kept walking ahead.

He walked to the girl step by step, staring at the face of the girl with greediness. He wanted to confirm something. After a while, he said, "Girl, you should go. Run... Run from people of Cold Moon Palace."

He then reached his hand into his clothes and took out a space ring. He gave it to the girl and said, "There is everything in it... Take it and live a good life. It should be enough to cover the expense of your entire life..."

When Xiao Mufei finished these words, he closed the eyes. He sighed and said, "You should go now."

The girl was shocked.

...

Chapter 780: I Am A Dan-Maker!

She never thought this would happen. She just attacked a superior cultivator in a vile way who was known to have a bad temper and put him into a fatal danger. However, he actually treated her with kindness.

He didn't kill her, didn't torture her, but gave her lots of treasures and materials!

"Why?" the girl asked confusedly.

She was curious.

Not only her, everybody else was curious!

Xiao Mufei closed his eyes. He was in pain. He blandly spoke, "No reason. I just don't want to kill you. I have never met you before. I don't need any reason to forgive you!"

The girl stood there, confused. Xiao Mufei shouted, "Why don't you just go? Do you want to die here so much?"

The girl was shocked. She suddenly kneeled and kowtowed to Xiao Mufei. She spoke in a low voice, "I am sorry. Thank you!"

And then she turned over and ran away fast.

The others wanted to chase her, but Xiao Mufei wouldn't let them. He saw the girl leave. There was reluctance and caring in his eyes...

"Why? Why would you do that..." Fang Dalong was in tears. "Master... Why would you let that murderer go... I wish her to be torn into pieces..."

Xiao Mufei shook his head and bitterly smiled. "Why? I owe her that much..."

In his eyes, there was sign of a weird emotion.

He staggered and said, "I have been thinking about how I would

die... I don't want to die... I have been struggling, fighting... I thought... I have to take you all back to the sect."

"It appears I am not going to make it."

"It turns out I will die this way. Nine Determination Dark Poison. The famous incurable poison in Qing-Yun Realm." His eyes were filled with some strange glow. He didn't have hatred or reluctance, instead, he felt relieved. "To die this way... It should be... I should be satisfied."

Fang Dalong burst in tears.

However, a voice sounded, "Elder Xiao, I am here. You won't die. Nine Determination Dark Poison? So what!"

Everybody looked to him. It was Ye Chongxiao, the young man who had just eaten the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish!

...

Fang Dalong was thrilled. He rushed over and grabbed Ye Xiao's hand. "Chongxiao, you... Can you? Really?"

Ye Xiao affirmed and spoke in a deep voice, "I can't guarantee that I can cure it. That must be some tricky poison. However, I am sure it is not a problem to restrain the poison for some time. I can keep the poison from impacting his body, so he won't die."

He then stepped forward to Xiao Mufei.

Fang Dalong and the others made way for him. They looked at Ye Xiao nervously. There was expectation in their eyes.

Xiao Mufei was blank. He smiled bitterly and said, "I don't want to die, but... I guess this is it... Nine Determination Dark Poison... It is incurable... Don't waste your time..."

In his eyes, there was his yearning for the past. He spoke in a low voice, "I... I knew it was a trap... But I still stepped in it myself... willingly... Heh, heh..."

Ye Xiao stepped closer to him and said, "Don't talk now. You are not making the call here. Just see what my dan beads can do first!"

He then took out a jade bottle from inside his clothes. There was a supreme dan bead in it, Supreme Antidote Dan. He put it into Xiao Mufei's mouth.

"It won't work... This is incurable in Qing-Yun Realm... It isn't ordinary poison..." Xiao Mufei didn't want Ye Xiao to do anything useless. However, in surprise, he saw a mass of mist and clouds in his sight.

His dying body suddenly became energetic again. There seemed to be energy pouring into his body without a stop. His eyes lit up.

Everybody was shocked by the magical view. After a while, somebody exclaimed, "Supreme Dan!?"

The others repeated, "Supreme Dan?"

They were all astonished. Some of them even tried rubbing their eyes to see if it was a dream.

[Could it be... really the mythical treasure?]

They couldn't believe what they saw.

The mist and clouds just showed up for an instant. They recognized it was a supreme dan bead and it was fed into Xiao Mufei's mouth. Xiao Mufei felt that dan melt into a mouthful of water and ran through his throat. It brought wonderful scent to his mouth. Before it all went to his throat, it already pumped up his arms and legs.

The poison that had nearly ran into his heart actually flowed backward!

After giving him the dan bead, Ye Xiao didn't stop. He turned over his hand and showed a knife. He suddenly swayed the dagger and ripped off a piece of flesh on Xiao Mufei's chest. He swayed the knife again and ripped off a piece of flesh on the leg. He did it again

and ripped off a piece of flesh on the other leg.

Almost at the same time, black blood spewed out from the wounds. It smelled so terrible that it made people throw up.

Nobody saw the knife disappear, but it was gone. Ye Xiao didn't stop though. He kept moving his right hand on Xiao Mufei's body like playing an instrument.

As he pressed him with spiritual energy, lots of dark blood spewed out like flying arrows. After a while, the blood became fresh red. Ye Xiao didn't hesitate as he just hit the wounds with his finger for several times to stop the blood and then seal up the wounds. Ye Xiao was doing a decisive and fast job. The black blood was gone and the healthy blood remained. If he didn't stop the bleeding in time, Xiao Mufei might die of loss of blood.

"Brother Ye, well done! It turns out you are so good at medical treatment!" Fang Dalong saw Xiao Mufei's face. It was still pale but not dark at all. It was getting better. He felt relieved and asked, "Are you a medic?"

"No. I am a dan-maker." Ye Xiao spoke with sorrow, "This dan bead... My master gave it to me... before he died. This is the only one that exists. As he said before he died, this dan bead is in epic level. It is the only one supreme dan bead we have for thousands of years... It is our unique treasure!"

"Dan-maker!"

Over one hundred men of Cold Moon Palace were shocked!

[He is a dan-maker?]

...

Chapter 781: You Won't Die With Me Around!

[He is a dan-maker?]

[His sect has made a supreme dan bead as their unique treasure!]

Before what just happened, they wouldn't believe Ye Xiao. If Ye Xiao told them this earlier, they would have smashed him to death and spat on him!

'You are shamelessly bragging! Supreme dan bead? Why don't you blow a bull to death!'

However, Ye Xiao had just shown them a supreme dan bead. They all saw the clouds and mist. Xiao Mufei was dying because of the Nine Determination Dark Poison, but that one dan bead pulled him back from death right away. They had to believe it was a supreme dan bead!

Supreme dan!

What did that mean in Qing-Yun Realm?

How many famous dan-maker was there in Qing-Yun Realm?

It wouldn't be more than ten.

Dan-makers in Qing-Yun Realm were all arrogant pricks!

However, none of them could make supreme dan beads!

They weren't even able to make superior level dan beads with dan glow when they needed to. It was a fifty percent chance with luck.

Dan-makers, famous or not, were all weak. None of them could cultivate both martial art and dan-making art at the same time.

One must choose one profession.

Some tried to handle both at the same time, but ended up failing

both. Many people who were talented in dan-making or martial art eventually became just normal, because they wasted too much time on the other field that they weren't talented in!

[Ye Chongxiao is definitely a monster! He has a bright future in martial art, also in dan-making! And he has unbelievable good luck! The first day in Qing-Yun Realm, he got ten thousand years of cultivation!]

[He... he is not just priceless!]

[He is definitely a living treasure!]

None of them, except Xiao Mufei, knew that Ye Xiao also had the Natural Exquisite Body. He was not just a monster. He was against the laws of nature!

At the moment, Xiao Mufei took a long breath out and slowly opened his eyes. He still felt in pain, but it was getting better.

He could smoothly operate his own spiritual qi in the body. Power was howling in his body with the energy from that dan bead, driving the poison out to cure him. That was overwhelming. His spiritual power was massively consumed, but it would recover as long as he took good rests.

He slowly stood up and smiled with relief. He said, "What a marvelous supreme dan bead. The poison is gone. I am safe. Don't worry, guys."

Ye Xiao wanted to say something, but Xiao Mufei hinted that he should stop. Xiao Mufei looked confused. "That girl... Is she gone?"

"Yes. You let her go. We didn't dare to stop her," the others answered.

"Hmm." Xiao Mufei looked into the distance and spoke seriously, "She actually just left... Hmm. Fine."

"Master, why would you do that?" Fang Dalong couldn't bear it anymore. He asked the question everybody else wanted to ask.

Xiao Mufei looked weird and said, "You must be confused. You must be surprised how that terrible trick got me? Oh. An inch could be long, while a mile could be short. That was specially designed for me. It succeeded, as you could see. It was a perfect trap..."

He smiled bitterly and said, "I had a daughter. She was so smart and adorable... I spoiled her as much as I could... Her name was Rongrong... That girl earlier, she looks exactly like my daughter... Almost the same face."

He said, "That trap only worked on me. It wouldn't get anybody else. For me, even though I knew it was a trap, I had to step in it. I don't regret..." He sighed and stopped talking.

Ye Xiao inhaled and couldn't find a word to say.

He was speechless about that trap. As he thought deeper, he felt terrified.

If Xiao Mufei didn't see that girl, the disciples of Cold Moon Palace might just kick them away or just kill them. That was a definite failure, yet the enemies just lost two ordinary people, two unprofessional assassins.

If Ye Xiao wasn't there, the Nine Determination Dark Poison would definitely kill Xiao Mufei. Two rather weak assassins and one important figure, that was a perfect gamble for the enemies!

They used the weak point in Xiao Mufei's heart, used the name and face of his departed daughter to kill him...

That was against humanity. That was vicious!

Xiao Mufei couldn't kill that girl. If he killed that girl, it would feel like he was killing his daughter!

That was his daughter's face! Even though she wasn't real, Xiao Mufei couldn't do it!

Deep in his heart, he knew it was a trap, but he still wanted to see

her. He knew he might get himself in trouble, but he didn't care anymore. Even when he was dying because of the poison, he chose to let that girl leave! He just let the person who killed him leave!

The disciples were silent.

Ye Xiao gently spoke, "Maybe it means something after all. When that girl heard that you allowed her to leave, she kowtowed three times to you. She said she was sorry and she thanked you!"

Xiao Mufei's eyes lit up like lightning. At this moment, his eyes were full of heat. It was so glistening that nobody dared to look at it!

Then he took a long breath out with relief.

He was still staring into the distance, murmuring, "I hope that she... has a happy life after she goes back."

Ye Xiao was touched.

Just because her name was Rongrong and looked like his daughter... he actually cared for her that much... She nearly took his life...

Was Xiao Mufei a good man?

No!

Not entirely at least!

He was definitely not a good man for people outside Cold Moon Palace!

However, as a father, he was so heart-warming.

He reminded Ye Xiao Ye Nantian. He couldn't help comparing him to Xiao Mufei.

'Who dares to mess with my son?'

'My son will do whatever he wants to!'

'Who dares to touch my son, I will smash him to death!'

Suddenly, he felt a mixture of emotions. He longed to see his fake father again.

...

Chapter 782: Painful Experience!

Now that things were settled, everybody had different thoughts about it. That was hard to explain. However, one must eat. They had to eat so as to recover their strength and deal with the next possible situation

It was awkwardly silent.

After the meal, they got back on the road.

Every disciple treated Ye Xiao much more kindly since he had saved Xiao Mufei's life. They started to chat with him.

"Brother Ye, it is a good time to join our sect really..." a man giggled and spoke with jealousy.

"That's right. The mountain gate just opened. You really are a lucky man." Another man spoke, "When the mountain gate closes again, you should be well-improved... What a good luck!"

Ye Xiao was confused. "Why? Mountain gate and disciples... What's the connection between these two?"

"A big one." Everybody, including Fang Dalong, answered at the same time. They looked unwilling to recall something sad.

"What?"

"When the mountain gate is open, it is convenient for us to go out to the martial world, to do some tasks for the sect, and get some spiritual stones as rewards."

Fang Dalong smiled bitterly. "It is dangerous to enter the martial world, but at least we are free. We can go wherever we want. Gosh... When the gate is closed... That's miserable."

"How?" Ye Xiao really couldn't understand.

"Well. When the gate is closed, there is no way out... We have hundreds of thousand people in the sect. What should we do in there?" Fang Dalong looked sad. "We fight each other."

Another man looked sad too. "That's right... We fight. There is a ranking system. That's what makes it worse."

"Ranking system?" Ye Xiao was shocked.

"Ranking of hundreds of thousand disciples..." Fang Dalong trembled. "Each of us will have to have ten fights in a day. We must win as many fights as possible to get higher ranked."

"There is a ranking list of the whole sect. There is a ranking list of the disciples in the same year... Those who are in the bottom fight like hell to enter a higher rank. The ones in the top try everything they can to keep their position..."

"Some of us are not so talented. They are weak... They are defeated in every fight everyday... But that's the way they become strengthened."

"You rookies barely have any cultivation foundations. In those fights, you will definitely get beaten the hell out. You won't be able to defeat anybody, yet you have to fight, so you get beaten."

Fang Dalong said, "When I first got into the sect, the mountain gate closed after I had cultivated half a year. Back then... I got beaten one hundred and seventy-six times in one day..."

"One hundred and seventy-six times... in a day..." Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What the hell?]

[That's horrible!]

"Well, the saddest thing is that I can't stop. The next day, I have to do it again... Day after day, year after year..." Fang Dalong sighed. "The gate remained closed for fifteen years and I had been beaten for fifteen years..."

"Even when you really don't want to fight, those who are under you will challenge you like crazy... They have to fight you... They have to get higher ranked... What a horrible memory."

The disciples all lowered their heads, sighing. One guy looked extremely painful. He said, "One hundred and seventy-six means nothing to me... There was a time, everyday in three months, I got beaten over two hundred times. My butt became thicker because they kept kicking them..."

The crowd burst in laughter.

Ye Xiao was terrified.

[Thank god... I luckily skipped that part. My cultivation level... If I have fight those hundreds of thousand men of Cold Moon Palace, I will definitely break that two hundred times record!]

[No wonder these men are so tough. They didn't even care about being hit. They are used to it...]

Xiao Mufei didn't die. The poison was dispelled. However, he had consumed too much spiritual qi. He looked solemn and grieved along the way. It seemed he was thinking about something important.

His disciples knew that he was not in a good mood, so nobody dared to bother him. They just talked in a low voice.

Ye Xiao was the only one who went over to him. He said, "Elder Xiao, the poison... are you ok?"

Xiao Mufei looked at him. He knew he couldn't lie to Ye Xiao about that. After all, the supreme dan bead was from Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao knew better than anybody. Xiao Mufei answered, "The Nine Determination Dark Poison has basically vanished, but there is still a bit left inside me. It won't kill me, but... it will be difficult to completely remove it. I have to stay alone for a long time to try to cure myself."

Ye Xiao nodded. It was exactly like what he had expected. Xiao Mufei was safe but still poisoned. Nine Determination Dark Poison was indeed the best poison in Qing-Yun Realm. Even supreme dan bead couldn't fully cure it.

That supreme dan bead was in average stage though. It was in supreme level, but still was not the best!

"Just keep this between you and me. We can't let them know I am still poisoned. Otherwise... They will lose faith in this. We may never be going to make it back to the sect." Xiao Mufei exhaled. "There are still five thousand and six hundred miles away..."

"There is danger in every step!"

Ye Xiao said, "Elder Xiao, I am new to this world. I must be one of the weakest ones. However, I think I still have a profound view. The seven sects are in the same league. Seven sects should almost be as powerful as each other. You are the best cultivator among us here. You are in the superior league. The others should be either in first league or the second. They are not the best cultivators in the world. The enemies we have encountered are all low-leveled cultivators. The strongest of them is just the same level as Fang Dalong, Brother Fang. In other words, their best group hasn't shown up yet. Am I right? Otherwise, we should have been through something much difficult earlier."

Xiao Mufei was surprised. He looked at Ye Xiao and couldn't believe the latter could see this. He said, "You are right. They haven't sent their true force yet. None of their best disciples showed up."

"There is a simple reason for that. There is a consensus among the sects. Sooner or later, people will know what happened to us."

...

Chapter 783: Life-risk Recommendation Letter

Xiao Mufei said, "Those who attacked us will eventually be scapegoats for their sects. It won't hurt their sect. If they send their best men to do this, once the world knows about this, these men will be sacrificed..."

"The harmony among the sects is superficial, but there are reasons why we must keep it." Xiao Mufei laughed coldly.

"Anyways, as we move further, the enemy will become stronger. When we are about one thousand miles away from our sect, the strongest enemies will show up. They will have to do whatever they can to stop us."

"They have set up so many traps to put us down. They will never let us live. The last one thousand miles is our real challenge. Life and death."

Xiao Mufei made a long sigh. "Only when we are all killed before we make it to the sect will the grudge can be held down. Nobody will start a war for some dead men..."

"However, if we make it back alive, things will be different!"

Xiao Mufei smiled coldly.

Ye Xiao nodded. Of course, he understood.

Dead men meant nothing. Even though everybody knew who kill them, people would only ignore the truth to protect the overall interests. However, if they could survive, and one of them was a talented young disciple that could be powerful enough to hold up the entire sect...

No matter what, they had to seek revenge, not just for the honor of the sect, but also for the departed disciples and for the talented man which was the very hope of the sect!

"Chongxiao, how did you get that supreme dan bead?" Xiao Mufei asked, frowning. "Dalong told me something. You said you are a dan-maker?"

He was unconscious, so he didn't hear Ye Xiao earlier.

Ye Xiao said, "Yes. I specialize dan making. Martial art is minor. We have different methods in dan making. The way we make dan beads requires strong physical fitness. We have to cultivate martial art. We use all kinds of materials to make dan beads. I am a cultivator of both dan-making and martial art..."

Xiao Mufei's eyes lit up. "How is your dan making level by the way?"

Apparently, Xiao Mufei knew that it wouldn't be good to cultivate both dan making and martial art. Ye Xiao was weak in martial art cultivation, so he must be weak in dan making too. He figured he could help Ye Xiao to focus on martial art so that Ye Xiao could be a great cultivator soon. However, he also figured if Ye Xiao focused on dan making, he would also become a great figure! Ye Xiao just gave him a supreme dan bead after all!

Ye Xiao looked ashamed. "I am ashamed. I am truly not skilled in dan making. My master used to say I spent too much time in martial art, that I wasted my talent in dan making. I didn't listen to him. I thought I was great in martial art. Now as I am here in this realm, I know he was right..."

"I am poor in dan making. When I try to make some low-level dan beads, I can create a bit dan glow. It isn't good glow though. Only about twenty percent of the dan beads I make can be well covered by dan glow. That's just a joke. I am ashamed."

Ye Xiao tried to be humble. He was actually humiliating himself. However, it shocked Xiao Mufei!

It was so shocking like a thunder!

[What?]

[Dan glow?]

[Twenty percent can be well covered by dan glow?]

[And you feel ashamed...]

[Ashamed your ass!]

[The dan makers we have been paying for in our sect can never easily make dan glow!]

[You are so great in it, yet you keep saying you are ashamed? Please let the other dan makers live!]

[Are you actually self-praising?]

[Hmm... He's from a sect that can make supreme dan beads after all... It is reasonable he can be so good at it...]

[Pah! No supreme dan beads could be found in even Qing-Yun Realm. How come it exists in lower realm? This young dan maker can actually be so good at dan making. I guess those arrogant dan makers in Qing-Yun Realm can all go hang themselves!]

[Well... Well... This young man is our disciple now!]

[In other words... a peerless treasure has become ours!]

"Oh, right. I must thank you for saving my life." Xiao Mufei spoke seriously, "Chongxiao, listen..."

His eyes looked profound. He gritted with his teeth while trying to make up his mind. He said, "You are from the lower realm. I know you are weak in cultivation, but you must have a stronger mind than other disciples. You should better have a broad view and make better judgments. If something happens, and we can't survive... I will try all I can to create an opportunity for you... You must find your way out and leave us. Hide yourself and never let others know who you are... All you have to do is to stay alive and find a way back to our sect!"

"No matter what happens, save yourself first!"

Xiao Mufei spoke word by word, "Only when you are alive will we die with honor. We will be avenged one day!"

"I will give you a Life-risk Recommendation Letter. You take it to Cold Moon Palace, and they will treat you well. You will be much more powerful than me someday!" He was serious. "Do you understand?"

It was a letter written with the blood of a man who would sacrifice his life to recommend someone. It could never be faked.

Ye Xiao said, "Elder Xiao, I don't think we are that desperate yet. We still have a chance to get back."

Xiao Mufei made a long sigh. "It is a dim and hazy situation ahead of us."

He shook his head. He looked sad and weak. "When I took you away from the Solar Ice River, I was confident and vigorous. Now... I am not. Otherwise, I won't write you any Life-risk Recommendation Letter. You must know it is quite a difficult thing to do!"

Ye Xiao felt heavy in the heart.

Only people beyond Dao Origin Stage in the sect could write a Life-risk Recommendation Letter. It is a great power in the sect. Whoever was recommended by a Dao Origin Stage in such way would definitely be valued. However, it was a special letter that would consume one's life. That was why many Dao Origin Stage Cultivators wouldn't write such a letter even once in their lives!

Xiao Mufei would do it. That meant in his heart, Ye Xiao was much more important than his own life!

...

Chapter 784: Die For You!

They walked on a flat road among farmlands while they were talking.

It was quiet.

However, suddenly a strong wind was rising, breaking the peace.

The wind blew over them.

The farmland rose and fell like waves in the sea. A bright sword light suddenly showed up in front of them!

That was cold!

It seemed the entire land was going to be frozen soon!

Another assassination!

This assassin was obviously much stronger than the previous ones!

That cold light showed up far away, but when it was about a hundred meters away, it became a huge helical storm!

The sword light was dazzling.

When the dazzling sword light was rushing over to them, nobody saw the enemy.

A bright light spot rushed over to them and became a storm of sword lights. It hit the crowd and blood rushed up to the sky like an explosion. At least thirty men were attacked. They all lied on the floor moaning, yet the sword light didn't slow down at all.

The attack was going toward Xiao Mufei and Ye Xiao.

It was a killing strike!

The enemy wanted them to die!

Over a hundred men in front of them. Some of them saw the attack coming and wielded their weapons to defend it. Yet none of

them succeeded. They just got hit down.

The massive sword light illuminated Xiao Mufei's hair. He shouted loudly and pushed Ye Xiao ten meters aside by one hand before he drew out the sword to face that sword light.

"Tell me your name, coward!"

There seemed to be a white figure hidden inside the sword light. He was smiling indifferently. - Clang! - After a huge sound of crashing, Xiao Mufei felt his long sword had hit nothing. He felt terrible about it.

The man inside the light spat out a full mouth of blood. The sword light started to waver, yet he didn't give up. He made a turn and rushed over to Ye Xiao like lightning!

Xiao Mufei shouted, "You crazy bastard!"

That man wasn't ordinary. He couldn't defeat Xiao Mufei, but he was not much weaker.

Xiao Mufei was affected by the poison inside his body. He might not be able to defeat this enemy in a tough fight. He knew it well, but the enemy knew it too. However, what the enemy chose to do was nuts!

The man forcibly struck right on Xiao Mufei's sword attack with his life energy to draw the power from Xiao Mufei's sword into his dantian. The power rushed into his dantian, so he was seriously injured. However, he made a turn to attack Ye Xiao when Xiao Mufei didn't have time to react!

That was such a crazy move!

No matter whether the man could eventually kill Ye Xiao or not, he would be seriously damaged on the dantian. That was impossible to cure!

The man was basically ruining his own career in the martial world.

He would sacrifice his life to kill Ye Chongxiao!

He was obviously resolute!

"Dalong!"

Xiao Mufei was trying to hold himself. He couldn't make a turn to chase that man yet. He had been seriously injured by that poison. That man was not as powerful as Xiao Mufei, but he had a perfect plan to get a chance to take Ye Xiao's life.

Xiao Mufei had to suppress down the poison inside himself, also got hit by that splendid sword light attack. It was too late for him to catch up with that man.

It was just shorter than one second, yet it was long enough to do so many things already!

Ye Xiao was still stepping back fast after being pushed by Xiao Mufei.

That man was moving faster than him with his sword in the hand!

Much faster!

More than ten times faster!

Ye Xiao wanted to do something, yet the man had caught up with him. The sword had pointed at Ye Xiao's chest.

Ye Xiao felt pain in the chest. He thought of many methods to deal with it, but he wasn't able to. How sad...

If that man pushed it further, Ye Xiao would definitely die.

A young man who had just come to this realm. How could he possibly escape a full-effort strike from a Dream Origin Stage cultivator? That man might be over Dream Origin Stage. He might be level one of Dao Origin Stage!

At the moment, somebody shouted!

A strong man rushed over and hit Ye Xiao aside.

Somebody saved Ye Xiao by pushing him away.

Fang Dalong!

Fang Dalong had been staying around Ye Xiao all along. Now that things were extremely dangerous, he didn't have time to think anymore. He just did it.

Ye Xiao rolled away after being pushed by Fang Dalong. The point of that man's sword scratched on his chest, making a long incision. It almost ripped his chest apart.

Ye Xiao finally stopped rolling. When he looked back to Fang Dalong, he saw Fang Dalong holding the sword in that man's hand. He was shouting and rushing toward that man.

The sword had stabbed into Fang Dalong's chest!

He ruined that's man's plan. The man didn't hesitate. He humphed and wheeled the sword. Fang Dalong exclaimed and his fingers were all cut! A hole appeared on his chest. That man stood there sneering and pulled out the sword. He then jumped up to the sky and started to make that splendid sword light storm. He was trying to flee away!

However!

"Give me your name! Bastard!" A thunder strike sounded in the sky. Xiao Mufei was rushing over to him!

His eyes were all red. He didn't care about the poison in his body anymore. What he did was to pour every bit of his energy into his sword!

[Fang Dalong died!]

[Just because I told him to protect Ye Chongxiao!]

'You must sacrifice everything to protect Ye Chongxiao!'

'Don't worry, master! If somebody dares to kill Brother Ye, he would have to step over my body!'

Xiao Mufei had been teaching Fang Dalong everything since he was a kid. He liked this eldest disciple the most. At this moment, he died to keep the promise!

Xiao Mufei would never let that man go! He would sacrifice himself to catch him.

That man had made that sword light in the sky, preparing to go.

However, Xiao Mufei's sword arrived.

Huge sounds of thunder strike were resounding in the sky. Clouds rolled while the wind was howling. It was like the end of the world. Lightning was striking and clouds were rolling!

He was like a mountain in the moonlight when he sat; like a rainbow when he stood; like clouds rolling when he moved. He moved with thunders striking around!

That appeared when a Dao Origin Stage cultivator fought in full power!

Xiao Mufei had gone crazy!

...

Chapter 785: It Was Saint Sunlight Sect!

The man had just begun to leave, but he wasn't gone yet. Xiao Mufei rushed so fast with thunder and clouds. As his sword pointed out, he was already so close to that man!

The man didn't even have time to exclaim before his body was cut into pieces by Xiao Mufei in the sky, becoming minced flesh flying in the air.

- Dang, dang, dang... -

The sword in his hand became pieces too!

A blood rain fell in the sky.

The enemy was down!

What about the disciple?

Xiao Mufei withdrew the long sword and moved straight away to Fang Dalong without even a glance at the enemy's broken body. He said, "Dalong... Dalong... You..."

Fang Dalong's strong body was standing there like a big pine tree, with his two eyes wide open angrily.

There was a hole through his chest. Xiao Mufei could see through it and see the ground. Fang Dalong's two hands had lost all the fingers. Blood had made a puddle under his feet.

"Master..." Fang Dalong's body was swaying. There was fear in his eyes all of a sudden. He murmured, "Master... I don't want to die... I... I am scared... Why is it so dark..."

After that, he fell down backward. - Puff! - He hit the floor. His two eyes were looking to the sky, and his lips were moving. "Revenge... Ah..."

He stopped breathing.

The world seemed silent all of a sudden.

Xiao Mufei was stunned.

After a long time, he shouted so loud with anger from deep inside his heart, from inside his soul... "AH!!!!!!!"

It was so deplorable.

Ye Xiao rushed over as quickly as he could. He didn't even check on himself. "Dalong... You..."

He was grabbing a bottle. In the bottle, there was a dan bead that might save Fang Dalong's life...

However...

It was too late.

He was dead!

That sword had gone through his chest and smashed his heart.

Even a supreme dan bead couldn't save him from death!

Ye Xiao was stunned too.

Fang Dalong just sacrificed himself to save Ye Xiao. Maybe he did it for his duty, or maybe he personally wanted to do it, or maybe he did it for the rest of the brothers in the sect...

No matter what, he died for Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao owed him so much!

Before it happened, Fang Dalong was talking to Ye Xiao. 'Our sect will depend on Brother Ye in the future. When you become a great figure, please don't forget me, although I am not a really helpful elder brother...'

Fang Dalong was an extrovert. He talked and laughed, drinking and eating with everybody else. No matter where Ye Xiao went, he followed... like a shadow...

Even when Ye Xiao was in the toilet, he would stay outside the door waiting patiently...

'You are our treasure. I can't relax for a bit. We can't let you get hurt...'

'If anybody tries to hurt you, he will have to kill me first and walk over my body.'

That was Fang Dalong's words.

His voice seemed to never fade away beside Ye Xiao's ear.

Many people had made such a promise to another, but seldom would they truly do it!

Men feared death!

Fang Dalong feared death too, but he protected his oath by giving up his life.

Everyone remember his voice and his words, yet he was lying quietly and would never wake up ever.

The last words he said...

'I don't want to die... I am scared...'

Who wasn't?

Fang Dalong was so scared to death, but he still chose to die. He chose to do something he was scared of.

Maybe there was nothing in his mind, except one thing. 'I will never let Brother Ye die!'

Xiao Mufei stayed silent for a long time. Suddenly, he shouted in great grief. He shouted to the sky with tears in his eyes.

The next moment, he turned around and stared at a pile of flesh on the floor. He walked over and dug it with his sword.

He was trying to find out who the assassin was!

He had to know who killed his most beloved disciple! He had to figure out which sect sent him!

The assassin was dead, in a rather miserable way, but it didn't ease the hatred in Xiao Mufei's heart!

He had to find out every detail about this assassination. He had to

wipe out all the people that were relevant, so as to relieve the pain from losing his beloved disciple!

"Revenge..." he murmured. Suddenly he shouted, "Revenge!"

It was a powerful shout. The earth trembled because of it!

How horrible when a Dao Origin Stage cultivator burst out his full power...

- Dang! - The sword hit something.

Xiao Mufei grabbed that thing. It was a space ring. He reached the other hand to wipe the ring. His face was suddenly covered by purple qi. It exploded with a huge sound!

Xiao Mufei was sacrificing his life to forcibly remove the soul stamp on the ring. He actually opened the space inside the ring, which should only be opened by the owner!

It was dangerous. If he did it wrong, the space ring would explode and create an energy flow. That could seriously bring damage to him!

However, he just ignored that. Nothing else was more important for him at the moment.

He just wanted to know who the assassin was!

Luckily, the assassin was much weaker than Xiao Mufei, not to mention he was already dead. The soul power on the space ring was weak. The soul power was gone and the ring was opened!

Xiao Mufei didn't hesitate. He poured out everything inside the ring.

There were dan beads, stones, weapons, medical materials...

Xiao Mufei saw a jade token.

It was an identity jade token of Saint Sunlight Sect.

He grabbed that token and stared at it. Suddenly, he shouted with fury, "Jin Nu! It was you! Saint Sunlight Sect! F*cking Saint

Sunlight Sect! From now on, there will never be reconciliation between me and you!"

There were just a few words on that jade token. 'Saint Sunlight Sect, Jin Nu'!

...

Chapter 786: Remember the Kindness; Remember the Hatred!

They all knew that man, Jin Nu. He was a famous cultivator part of the second generation disciple of Saint Sunlight Sect. He was limited by his own talent and experience, so he couldn't enter the ten great disciples in his sect. However, he was still one of the most valuable twenty disciples in the second generation!

His sword art was marvelous.

Although he was a good cultivator, Saint Sunlight Sect didn't really like him, because he liked killing.

For him, the best thing in his life was to kill with one sword move.

It should be normal that a cultivator killed another in Qing-Yun Realm, however, he was too arrogant. He kept talking about who he recently killed and how many people he had killed. Saint Sunlight Sect tried to show the world it was a righteous sect, so it didn't like the way Jin Nu acted, although Saint Sunlight Sect was actually vile and evil.

The important figures in Saint Sunlight Sect had scolded Jin Nu in front of other sects. However, everybody knew that it was just acting. There had never been any punishment given to him!

Jin Nu never changed. He killed whoever he wanted to kill!

This time, when he was trying to kill somebody, he was killed instead.

Xiao Mufei's full-power strike crashed into him with fury, ripping him into pieces!

Saint Sunlight Sect had sent a real good disciple this time. Jin Nu was even willing to sacrifice himself to complete the mission. Saint Sunlight Sect was paying a lot to finish Ye Xiao's life.

It was a great loss to sacrifice such a good man, even for great sects like Saint Sunlight Sect.

Jin Nu was qualified to his fame. He really was brilliant. He made one attack and it broke three layers of defense of Cold Moon Palace disciples. Besides, he earned an opportunity to kill Ye Xiao from Xiao Mufei's attack. If Fang Dalong wasn't that loyal and honest, he would definitely succeed.

Within seconds, thirty-six third generation and fourth generation disciples of Cold Moon Palace died under his sword, including Fang Dalong, one of the third generation disciples!

Ye Xiao sat there looking at Fang Dalong's body. He felt blank.

[Fang Dalong died!]

[For me!]

[If he didn't come out, I would have been killed.]

Ye Xiao was such an experienced cultivator. Of course, he knew what would happen if Fang Dalong didn't save him!

Even though he had the experience of a Dao Origin Stage cultivator and the mysterious martial art, East-rising Purple Qi, also countless of marvelous dan beads, none of these could protect him at that moment!

He hated Cold Moon Palace because of what they had done to him in his previous life!

However, the disciples of Cold Moon Palace had been sacrificing themselves to keep him alive.

If he ignored the hatred, joined Cold Moon Palace and brought greatness to it, he would fail his original aspiration!

If he ignored the kindness, kept fighting Cold Moon Palace and brought extermination to it, he would fail his conscience!

He didn't know which side to choose...

He felt confused.

He felt extremely contradictory.

After a long time, he closed the eyes and made a sigh. He spoke in a low voice, "Dalong, I will avenge you! I will destroy the entire Saint Sunlight Sect for you! I will do it, but not all because of you. However, it is the best I can do for you!"

Then he stood up quietly. He looked calm.

[That's right. Qing-Yun Realm is still the world I remember. People will do everything for their own interests!]

[They will kill without reasons. They also kill a million innocent people with one simple reason!]

[This is the martial world!]

[This is Qing-Yun Realm.]

[Only swords can judge. Power means everything!]

[If I am not powerful enough, I will either get myself killed or make people die for me!]

...

There were one hundred and seventy men of Cold Moon Palace who survived from that Dark Pine Forest. Now, thirty-six were dead.

Including Ye Xiao, there were only one hundred and thirty-five alive.

They got back to the road. The disciples were all listless and quiet. Xiao Mufei was like a volcano that would erupt at any second. He was full of rage and fury.

"There will be more people showing up. Let them come. I will kill every one of them without mercy. I won't let any of them live!" Xiao Mufei gritted his teeth. There was hatred in his eyes.

"Elder Xiao, I have a question. This time, the other six sects

people who have been hunting that fish with you guys, which six were the leaders? How's their cultivation level?" Ye Xiao asked.

Xiao Mufei once again gritted his teeth. "Sun Sky Palace, Qin Change, who has just entered level two of Dao Origin Stage. Saint Starlight Sect, Tian Weijian, who has just entered level two of Dao Origin Stage while he stayed in Polar Ice River..."

He gave Ye Xiao six people's names.

They had encountered over a dozen assassinations. Three of them were managed by Saint Sunlight Sect, two of them were proceeded by Saint Starlight Sect, while the rest of them were from the other sects.

In other words, the six sects were all responsible.

When Xiao Mufei said the names of those men from the other six sects, Ye Xiao kept them deep in mind.

Xiao Mufei understood why Ye Xiao asked for the names.

Seven great sects, only Cold Moon Palace was attacked. They couldn't contact their sect, but the other six could still send messages to give orders. It was surely the administrative staff of the six sects who arranged all these ambushes.

However, the ones who started it must be the six people who led their teams in the Polar Ice River!

These six men must be the ones who implemented the evil plans.

Ye Xiao wanted to remember these people, so that he could avenge Fang Dalong.

Xiao Mufei understood it. He didn't stop him.

He didn't say anything about it either.

He just gave him the names.

They were gone. Fang Dalong's body had become ashes inside a pot in a box on the back of Xiao Mufei.

An eight chi tall tough man was now inside a half chi wide box.
If Fang Dalong knew this, I wonder if he would feel aggrieved!

Chapter 787: That Man!

When they had moved a hundred miles further, they encountered another ambush. This time, Xiao Mufei was leading the way. He rushed ahead at first.

After a while, Xiao Mufei walked out from the forest, with his long sword in his hand, covered by murderous qi. His face looked cold like ice. There was blood dripping down along his sword.

"Let's move!" Xiao Mufei shouted in a deep voice.

It was the only fight that nobody on Cold Moon Palace's side died!

Hmm. When Xiao Mufei was poisoned, nobody died either, but Ye Xiao saved him. If he hadn't given him the supreme dan bead, Xiao Mufei would have died for sure!

Three hundred miles later, there was another fight. This time, Cold Moon Palace people didn't get lucky. Several sects had participated in this fight. The enemy was so powerful. Xiao Mufei definitely fought hard. He took care of most of the enemy's force. They eventually kicked away the enemies, but over forty disciples died.

There were less than a hundred disciples alive now!

Every day after that, there were people who died in the fights. The hatred in Ye Xiao's heart was getting heavier and heavier. The murderous qi in him was getting denser.

One day... in a forest.

Xiao Mufei looked gloomy. He was quietly eating the roasted wild pig. His eyes kept looking around like sharp swords.

Over twenty disciples of Cold Moon Palace were eating, sitting around.

A few of them were injured. The wounds were still bleeding.

As they got closer to the sect, the enemies sent more powerful

forces to attack them.

Cold Moon Palace had been losing their men in every fight.

They had three hundred and sixty people when they left the Polar Ice River, but now, only twenty-one disciples were around Ye Xiao and Xiao Mufei!

Xiao Mufei seemed insensible now, but Ye Xiao knew he wasn't.

His eyes were getting more and more fierce and vicious. It was the deep hatred hiding in his eyes.

Every disciple had been staying with Xiao Mufei in Polar Ice River for over ten years!

They were like families to each other.

However, one by one, they died in front of him.

Xiao Mufei had a mission to do, and he wanted to take revenge so badly. If not, he should have been broken down by now.

Ye Xiao didn't make any contribution in those fights. Sometimes, he used dan beads to save people. What he did was to concentrate in cultivation.

He was quiet, seemingly lost in thoughts.

He was obviously improved a lot.

Xiao Mufei felt scared when he realized how fast Ye Xiao improved.

However, it was a great comfort to him too!

"How is your cultivation today?"

"Level three of Spirit Origin Stage. Over a dozen new qi vortexes."

"Good."

...

"What about today?"

"Last step in level three of Spirit Origin Stage."

"Good."

...

"What about today?"

"I have reached the top of level three of Spirit Origin Stage. Over fifty new qi vortexes."

"That's fast!"

...

"Today?"

"Level four!"

"Shhh..."

Xiao Mufei was satisfied with such an improvement.

He had to be!

There were many talented cultivators in the history. They were all fast in cultivation.

However, Ye Xiao was the fastest he had ever known.

Xiao Mufei even thought that there wouldn't be anybody faster in the future!

"Don't just try to be faster," Xiao Mufei warned him.

"I know."

"You must go steadily and surely." Xiao Mufei said, "You need a strong foundation. When you finally have the chance to kill the other sects, you will be able to do it with joy and delight!"

"Yes," Ye Xiao replied.

"I want nothing more in this life now. I don't think I can take revenge, even though I want it so badly. I am limited in cultivation. I am old and I couldn't break through level three of Dao Origin Stage. I may be one of the strongest in the world... but wiping out those sects... I can't..."

"I may get myself killed before I can get near to their gates.

"You have to be much stronger than me if you want to take revenge on those sects!

"Chongxiao, you are full of hope. Don't feel down. Focus on cultivating. No more than one hundred years later, you will be more powerful than me. You may be much more powerful than me. You have such great talent. Do not doubt that!"

"But before you reach level nine of Dao Origin Stage, don't even think about revenge." He spoke deeply, "Before that, you should try to stay low. Don't show your true power. I can show my power, because I will never be stronger than now. They wouldn't care. If they find out how talented you are, they will kill you. They will do everything to kill you. Remember, do not talk too much. You are our hope. You are the only one who can take revenge for us!"

"I understand."

"Hmm. Remember, if they know you are hostile to them, if they know you are this talented, they will send their first generation disciples after you... not just these useless people!"

"They may even send their elders... The ten thousand years of cultivation inside you is so terrifying. It is a strong power that can shake the foundations of all the sects. They wouldn't let you grow stronger. They won't allow you to become a figure... as horrible as that man!"

"All in all, before you are fully improved, stay low."

"Understood!"

'As horrible as that man'! Who was that man? Ye Xiao didn't ask. Xiao Mufei didn't say.

Ye Xiao knew who he was though.

He was Ye Xiao.

Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao!

...

Xiao Mufei made a long sigh.

Unexpectedly, there was nothing that happened that night.

Xiao Mufei and Ye Xiao didn't feel relaxed at all. It must be the calm before the storms.

Indeed, it was. The next morning, when everybody got up, preparing to leave...

Xiao Mufei suddenly stopped moving, like a stone statue!

Suddenly, he shouted to the sky. He sounded so weird. He seemed to be calling for something or communicating with somebody.

Nobody understood. They wondered what Elder Xiao was doing.

The next moment, they got it.

There were two little birds flying down from the sky so fast like shooting arrows.

...

Chapter 788: Unforeseen Event!

Not only those two little birds, there were countless birds that started to fly fast in the sky...

Everybody knew they were carriers of the sects!

Countless carrier birds were flying in the sky at the same time, that was rare.

A few years earlier, it had happened once. That was the only one they knew.

Only when something really influential happened—an event that could affect the future of the entire realm—would the carrier birds act like this.

Once such a thing happened, every sect would try to call their disciples back to the sect.

How could all the sects encounter something huge at the same time?

Was it really something that could bring change to the entire realm?

No matter what, it was a good thing for Xiao Mufei's people!

They could finally reconnect to their sect now!

That two flying birds brought them this opportunity!

Cold Moon Palace was good at beast training. Xiao Mufei stayed in the Polar Ice River with his men for so many years. It was so cold there that few beasts could stand that coldness. Xiao Mufei and his men all left their trained beast in the sect.

They didn't bring their beasts, but they took a few special birds as carriers with them. The weakest disciple among the three hundred and sixty was in Dream Origin Stage. Because they didn't have their beasts around, they were weakened. That was why so many of them died in the fights.

Xiao Mufei was also weakened. If he had his beast, he could defeat enemies in level five of Dao Origin Stage!

However, he didn't have it, so he was much weaker.

The disciples were all good at beast training. They were confused, but they knew they shouldn't disturb Xiao Mufei.

Xiao Mufei held the Iron-winged Sparrow in his hand. He took off a small iron stick on the foot of the sparrow. There was a wax pill inside the stick.

Xiao Mufei opened the wax pill and read the letter inside. He looked worried, but then he relaxed. For the first time, he felt relieved.

He spoke in a deep voice, "This is an unforeseen event... It concerns all the sects... However, we are saved."

Ye Xiao said, "What event? How can it make such an influence?"

The others were all waiting for Xiao Mufei's response.

Xiao Mufei made a long sigh. "A huge event from the sect."

Before others asked, he read the letter for the others.

"Xuan Bing, who has been missing for months, the Grand Elder of Misty Cloud Palace, now appears in the realm. She has been improved greatly. She fought against our sect and warned us all in stern words. She has broken our pailou [1]. Our three grand elders fought against her but were badly hurt... Disciples should return to the sect as soon as possible. The gate will be closed soon."

The disciples were all stunned.

Ye Xiao was confused.

[What is it?]

He had heard about the grand elder of Misty Cloud Palace, Xuan Bing. She was the most powerful woman in Qing-Yun Realm, one of the three most powerful figures in the realm. No conclusion

could be made about who was the most powerful.

Even Xiao Monarch, in his previous life, didn't dare to mess with her. Ye Xiao have once shaken the heaven and earth in this realm in his previous life. He had been fighting against a few sects and even badly damaged them. However, compared to Xuan Bing, the marvelous figure in the world, he was so weak. She could have easily killed him within a few moves! That was not a joke!

Misty Cloud Palace had been built behind the clouds and fogs. They merely interfere in others' business. Ye Xiao learned from Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu that Misty Cloud Palace was in a severe crisis. Their lotuses were all destroyed. Everybody in their sect was now in need of the lotus. Xuan Bing should have been dying or fighting against the divine punishment at the moment.

Basically, they should be thankful that nobody made troubles on them. How could this Elder Xuan Bing attack other sects like this?

It didn't seem like there was any specific reason though. She must be showing her prestige...

In Ye Xiao's memory, that mysterious Elder Xuan Bing from Misty Cloud Palace was such a powerful figure, but she wasn't an enemy to any of the seven sects...

Why did she do that?

"I don't know the reason. The sect didn't say. I can only figure it out after we are back to the sect."

Xiao Mufei said, "However, the sparrows flew over here. That means we are no longer a blank zone of the communication system. We can sent a message back to the sect again. Our problem here... is solved."

He looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Chongxiao can definitely return to the sect."

He ripped off a piece of cloth on his clothes and wrote on it with his blood. 'Disciples encountered ambushes on the way back. We

need support as soon as possible! Three hundred and sixty men... Mostly died... Please send support as soon as possible..."

Then he put it on the foot of that sparrow and set it free.

As he didn't want anybody to attack that bird, he jumped up real high in the sky with sword light on his sword. He even followed the bird for a while to protect it.

He didn't return after the bird finally flew above the clouds.

Two days after that, nobody attacked them at all.

It was so peaceful that they all felt strange now.

When they left the mountains and arrived at a town, they finally knew what happened after talking to somebody in the martial world!

It was a shocking news. They were all surprised.

Several months earlier, after that huge fight against Xue Danru from Ice Cloud Palace, Xuan Bing disappeared. Now she appeared again.

During these months, Misty Cloud Palace had been attacked by the united force of the two halls, two palaces and seven sects. That was such a mess.

Xuan Bing was taking revenge these days!

The first sect she went for was Saint Sunlight Sect. She wore a black robe, descending to the sect quietly. She just did one thing. She killed. She killed a path along the main hall of Saint Sunlight Sect and fought against the ten grand elders. Two elders were disabled. At the end, she only left a few words and casually left.

"Behave yourself from now on! Close your gate for three years! Otherwise, I will return!"

Saint Sunlight Sect was nearly broken by the great Elder Xuan Bing.

...

[1] decorated archway

Chapter 789: Myth!

That was just the beginning. Xuan Bing didn't even pull off her energy flow after breaking down Saint Sunlight Sect. She went directly to Saint Starlight Sect. She kept rushing on the way and shot into the center of the sect. She didn't waste time talking. She just started killing.

That was a one-sided crack-down. After disabling a few people of Saint Starlight Sect, she left a few words behind too, "From now on, be careful! Close your gate for three years!"

Then it was Cold Moon Palace. It was much better this time, because only a few elders got injured. Nobody was disabled or killed. It was much better than Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect.

The other four sects encountered the same thing. Elder Xuan Bing swept over them all.

After the seven sects, she didn't stop. She went to the other two palaces of the three great palaces, Ice Cloud Palace and Qiong-Hua Palace. At the end, she went to the two great halls!

She was just like the whirlwind, blowing over all the most powerful forces in Qing-Yun Realm!

The two great halls were better. After all, they had some great cultivators who could fight against Xuan Bing, so they didn't lose much. The two palaces didn't lose a lot either. Three palaces were all run by ladies. Xuan Bing didn't really try to destroy them. Among the seven great sects, the sun, moon, and star were the worst. The others were better.

Cold Moon Palace, Saint Sunlight Sect, and Saint Starlight Sect were definitely unlucky.

Not long earlier, they joined together to kill Xiao Monarch and successfully took his life. That was a war that lasted for several

months. Nearly half of their best men died.

Countless of their elite disciples died.

Those who survived the fight against Xiao Monarch were all seriously injured when they returned to their sects.

Some Dao Origin Stage cultivators would stay wounded for decades. Those who didn't get injured badly would need a long time to recover too.

That was why they didn't have a chance facing Elder Xuan Bing of Misty Cloud Palace.

Xuan Bing easily swept them in their own places.

That embarrassed them.

They were lucky that Xuan Bing didn't really try to wipe them out. She held back her punches after all, otherwise, the three sects might no longer exist...

"Why is Elder Xuan Bing so crazy? She actually challenged all the super forces in the world on her own..." A disciple murmured, "What is she doing..."

"Fool!"

Xiao Mufei scolded, "Grand Elder Xuan Bing was missing. Somebody said she had fallen..."

"Because of that, everybody kept pushing Misty Cloud Palace but didn't really try to destroy them. We all wanted to know if Xuan Bing had truly fallen or not.

"If she was still alive, she would definitely show up to protect her sect. If she didn't show up, she must be dead. Then Misty Cloud Palace would be wiped out.

"Looking at it now, we got the result... Xuan Bing is alive, and she is even stronger. She is unbelievably powerful now. In other words, she has been cultivating secretly all the time."

He sighed. "That was such a stupid mistake. The great sects were finding troubles for themselves... That was pouring a basin of sh*t onto ourselves... The martial world will be in peace for a period of time for sure now."

Everybody sighed and felt relieved.

[Well if all the sects are at peace, then we won't be hunted. This is bad for the sect, but it saves our lives!]

Ye Xiao felt strange though.

He hadn't seen Grand Elder Xuan Bing, but... he knew she was a super powerful figure in the world... but then again, she shouldn't be that powerful...

He remembered the ranking list of the cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm.

Among the ten most powerful cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm, one man occupied the first for a long time. Nobody could replace him yet.

That man was famous. His name was Wu Fa.

People only knew how to pronounce his name, but nobody knew how to spell it...

He had been the first cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm for so many years. The world was beneath his feet.

The two lords of the great halls came next to him. People knew the name of the 'one man', but nobody knew anything about the two lords!

After the two lords, it was the three great palaces. Grand Elder Xuan Bing of Misty Cloud Palace was the strongest. She was actually equally powerful as the two lords, but her martial art was in the same level of the other two great figures in the other two palaces.

The ten most powerful people represented ten different forces. It

was basically a ranking list of the ten most powerful forces too.

There were a few other cultivators who were actually qualified to be in the top ten powerful cultivators, but they didn't have a sect supporting them on the back, so they didn't get in the list. However, they were also truly powerful.

All in all, as Ye Xiao could remember, Xuan Bing shouldn't be this powerful.

She wasn't just fighting against one or two cultivators. She fought against all the cultivators in all those forces!

Except Wu Fa, she fought against all the people on that top ten list!

She fought against all those great figures in turns. She challenged them and made troubles for those sects. She traveled a hundred thousand miles just to beat all those men up!

That was such a myth!

That was unbelievable.

Yet it did happen.

Why would Xuan Bing become so powerful?

...

Chapter 790: Zhan Yunfei!

Had she been cultivating secretly during the time she was missing like Xiao Mufei said? Was that why she was improved that much?

Ye Xiao felt that this world was no longer the same since he left less than two years ago. He felt completely strange to this world now.

"No matter what, Elder Xuan Bing shouldn't be this strong." Xiao Mufei frowned.

After feeling the astonishment, he thought for a while and spoke.

"Hmm. Elder Xiao, you said she wasn't missing. Instead, she was cultivating secretly all the time. Isn't it reasonable that she should be improved? Why did you say she shouldn't?"

Ye Xiao thought and said, "Or do you mean even though she was already really powerful in the old days, she shouldn't be this strong after her secret cultivation? That she shouldn't be strong enough to defeat all other great forces at a time?"

"Hmmm... That's right." Xiao Mufei said, "Chongxiao, you are new here. There are many things you don't know. Xuan Bing was already a world shocking name in this world. People call her the World's First Female Demon. However, that is just a demon... In the two great halls and three palaces, there might not be anybody who are stronger than her, but there are definitely people who are equal to her. Xuan Bing swept the seven sects. That is understandable. But she defeated the two great halls and the other two palaces... That is impossible."

Ye Xiao was deep in thought for a while and then he said, "Was it possible that this grand elder got inspired by something special or ate something marvelous to greatly improve her strength? I am new here. I barely know the natural rules in this world. In the

realm I am from, there are lots of treasures and materials that can boost one's cultivation. Maybe she got something..."

"Chongxiao, you are right about that, except that only works on people in low stages. For people above Dao Origin Stage, the only way to improve oneself is to spend years to cultivate. Every bit of improvement is a blessing from the heavens. Treasures mean nothing. Xuan Bing is the Grand Elder of Misty Cloud Palace. She has been one of the most powerful figures in Qing-Yun Realm for so many years. Do you really think there are any special treasures in the world that can make her improve this much in such a short time?"

Xiao Mufei frowned. He was confused too.

No matter what, the fact was this legendary level cultivator, Elder Xuan Bing, shocked the world again!

Xuan Bing treated different sects differently.

She obviously targeted certain sects. When she went to her destined enemy, Ice Cloud Palace, all she wanted to do was just to show her strength.

Cold Moon Palace had three elders seriously injured, but they still felt lucky compared to the other two sects. Weirdly, they were glad.

Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect were much worse. They both were specially targeted by Elder Xuan Bing!

Every cultivator in Saint Sunlight Sect who were above level eight of Dao Origin Stage was attacked. Two of them were disabled, completely ruined. Those Dao Origin Stage cultivators who were still too weak to fight Xuan Bing all firmly got slapped on the face!

There were hundreds of Dao Origin Stage cultivators in Saint Sunlight Sect!

Elder Xuan Bing actually slapped them one by one.

Of course, they wanted to get away but they couldn't!

The grand elder of Saint Sunlight Sect spat out a full mouth of blood when he saw how Xuan Bing humiliated his men...

Saint Starlight Sect encountered the same thing.

All cultivators above level eight of Dao Origin Stage got injured, including one disabled. The rest of the Dao Origin Stage cultivators got slapped on the face hard.

That was a hard and loud slapping session.

What she did after all that was to leave the same words.

It looked like the seven sects encountered the same thing, but there were quite different things she did to them. She just made small disturbances to the other five sects and that was all.

Cold Moon Palace had it rough. They had three elders who were severely injured, but nobody was disabled.

Apparently, Xuan Bing hated Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect the most.

These two sects were especially pissed because of that.

[We didn't really hurt Misty Cloud Palace either... We didn't offend you personally!]

[When the two great halls and the other two palaces attacked you, we didn't do it...]

[Why did you treat us the worst?]

In fact, they did want to go after the great halls and palaces to attack her sect back then.

However, after the war against Xiao Monarch, the three factions were exhausted.

Misty Cloud Palace was still a rather powerful force even without Xuan Bing. The three factions wasn't sure they could win the fight, so they didn't start it...

They had been behaving themselves for over a year.

However, even if they had tried to stay in peace, troubles hit them. Before they realized what really happened, Xuan Bing kicked them hard.

According to Xiao Mufei, Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect should be happy about it. Xuan Bing must have shown them mercy since she only slapped the disciples' faces and didn't really hurt them. Twenty percent harder, she could have killed all those cultivators by slapping!

They should be grateful as she spared all those men's lives!

Xiao Mufei's disciples all agreed, so they despised the other two factions!

The world was all talking about this.

News spread around the world so fast like a pestilence.

Xiao Mufei and his men all felt thankful to what Xuan Bing did to the other two factions. However, they still felt humiliated. After all, Xuan Bing had attacked their sect too. Three elders of Cold Moon Palace got damaged. It disgraced Cold Moon Palace!

Xuan Bing fought the entire world!

Ye Xiao felt thrilled about it.

He was shaking because of excitement.

[That is the real peerless cultivator!]

[That is awesome!]

[I was alright in the previous life. I was famous, but I was much worse than Xuan Bing.]

[Three factions didn't even send their best forces, yet I died in their hands. Xuan Bing fought against all of them and defeated all of them!]

[If I... If I can sweep the entire world like that, it must be great!]

He felt his blood boiling while thinking of it.

Why didn't Xuan Bing get to Wu Fa? People had the same opinion. She couldn't find him! Wu Fa was too mysterious!

Otherwise, how could she let him go.

She might lose, but she would definitely go get a fight!

That was for sure!

Suddenly, Xuan Bing's fame was getting close to Wu Fa. She might replace Wu Fa and become the world's first cultivator.

"Misty Cloud Palace is rising crazily! We must be careful. Do not mess with their people. If you piss them off, you should better pray for your life. Once they get to our sect, they will show their prestige to the world by stepping on the ruins of our sect. That won't be good."

Misty Cloud Palace suddenly became the sect with the most prestige!

...

When Cold Moon Palace got the message from Xiao Mufei, they were all shocked.

Without hesitation, Cold Moon Palace sent their men to help.

Ye Xiao and the others had only moved forward for about seven hundred miles after Xiao Mufei sent the message. Suddenly, he saw lightning striking in the sky. Many male figures got down from the sky so fast.

Seven men arrived. Everyone was one of the first league cultivators!

The leader of the seven men was a middle-aged man with a hawk nose. His face was like jade, his eyebrows were thick, and his eyes were bright. His long white robe made him look taller. Take away that ugly nose, he would be a beautiful man.

Ye Xiao's pupils contracted when he saw that man.

It was Zhan Yunfei, the Rainbow Wing of the Dual Wings of Moon!

A level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator.

He never thought that it was him who was sent to help Xiao Mufei!

Cold Moon Palace must really have attached great importance to this event.

Zhan Yunfei was one of the twenty most powerful figures in Cold Moon Palace, among over dozens of thousands of disciples!

His soul beast was a Spread Vulture. With the vulture around, he could defeat a level nine Dao Origin Stage cultivator!

Zhan Yunfei had participated in the fight against Xiao Monarch back then. He was the person who stabbed hard with a sword in Ye Xiao's right leg.

However, he didn't get any better in that fight. He was hit by Ye Xiao with a palm strike on the chest and spat out a mouthful of blood. If his vulture didn't kept disturbing Xiao Monarch, Zhan Yunfei should have died there. In the end, he survived but his vulture's wing was broken by Xiao Monarch. It couldn't fly anymore.

Xiao Monarch's palm strike was rather powerful. Zhan Yunfei still looked pale on the face at the moment. Apparently, he had yet to fully recover from that palm strike.

...

Chapter 791: Unworthy of Mentioning?

Anyway, when Xiao Mufei saw Zhan Yunfei and the other six people, he felt relieved and made a long breath out.

They were over a thousand miles away from the sect. Now that Zhan Yunfei was here, they would be safe.

Xiao Mufei was sure they would be back to the sect safely. Even if the sky fell, Zhan Yunfei could hold it up!

He had lost his soul beast when they were fighting Xiao Monarch, and he hasn't fully recovered yet. However, he was level eight of Dao Origin Stage. That was enough!

"What's wrong?" Zhan Yunfei walked closer in big strides. His eyes were sharp like hawks while staring at Xiao Mufei. "Mufei, did anything happen back in the Polar Ice River? Powerful enemy?"

The other six people all looked at him with astonishment and anger.

They couldn't believe Cold Moon Palace would suffer such a loss!

Three hundred and sixty disciples, over three hundred of them died.

That was a great loss!

"There was an accident." Xiao Mufei didn't have time to explain everything in that letter. It was a long story after all. He walked over to the seven men and said, "That Golden-scaled Dragon Fish is gone..."

"What?" The seven men frowned.

"Listen..." Xiao Mufei pointed at Ye Xiao and explained everything to Zhan Yunfei in a low voice. "... So, we have been through a lot to make it here... Every step could have taken our lives..."

"Hmm. Are you poisoned?" Zhan Yunfei frowned. He didn't look

at Ye Xiao. He grabbed Xiao Mufei's arm and his spiritual energy ran into Xiao Mufei's Jing and Mai. He was shocked. "Nine Destinations Dark Poison [1]?"

He then operated his martial art in full power. A circle of moonlight shined above his head!

His spiritual power rushed into Xiao Mufei's Jing and Mai like angry tides. It washed over Xiao Mufei's body. Xiao Mufei suddenly spat out a mouthful of dark blood, then he felt rather relieved. He looked energetic again.

"Alright." Zhan Yunfei let go of Xiao Mufei's arm and smiled. "You are lucky that the poison has mostly been removed. Otherwise, I wouldn't be able to help."

"Thank you, Master Zhan." Xiao Mufei bowed.

"No need. There is just a bit poison left in your body. You will be fine after a month of rest with your cultivation capability. What I did was just to help you a bit so that you can be better earlier!" Zhan Yunfei said.

Xiao Mufei bitterly smiled. "Master, it is more than just a bit of help. You saved me from despair. You must know that I have been exhausted in all aspects recently. It is getting more and more difficult to fight against that poison in my body. If you didn't do me such a great favor, I may need more than three years to fully recover!"

"You call me master. How can I just let you suffer? However... That poison, the Nine Destinations Dark, how did you remove most of it? I guess you must have gotten hit by a weapon with poison. This poison can absolutely kill everyone below Dao Origin Stage. You are a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, but you are still too weak to drive that poison out of your body. How did you do that..." Zhan Yunfei asked with his hands behind the back.

"Well... Because of Chongxiao..." Xiao Mufei explained it and

then spoke in a low voice, "... Chongxiao ate the fish with luck. He is a dan-maker, an outstanding one. The sect he comes from has supreme dan beads. I should have died when I got hit by the poison, but..."

Finally, Zhan Yunfei looked around and gazed at Ye Xiao. He smiled and said, "Young man, your name is Chongxiao?"

He sounded gentle and nice, but he obviously talked in a high position.

Ye Xiao was prepared for this.

Zhan Yunfei was above tens of thousands of people in the sect. How could he not go about with his head high in the air when talking to a new disciple?

"Yes," Ye Xiao answered, neither humble nor pushy. He looked polite as a new disciple should do in a sect, also prideful as he was the most powerful person in the realm where he was from.

Zhan Yunfei smiled.

He looked at Ye Xiao from head to toe and asked, "Mufei, you told me that although he is weak, but he improves unbelievably fast. Strangely, I don't see how good he is. He is just like a normal man!"

Xiao Mufei smiled. "That is why I said he is such a talented man. He ate the inner core of the Golden-scaled Dragon Fish. It has the specialty of hiding its energy. Chongxiao was just like that fish. He naturally shields himself from being observed. People who have less than ten thousand years of cultivation will never be able to see through him."

"Oh?" Zhan Yunfei was interested. He murmured, "Golden-scaled Dragon Fish... Ten thousand years of cultivation... Dan-maker..."

Suddenly he took in a cold breath. He looked at Ye Xiao again, as if he was a rare and priceless treasure in the world that everybody wanted.

The next moment, he grabbed Ye Xiao's hand. A stream of powerful spiritual energy started to pour into Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai and ran around his body.

"Spirit Origin Stage. Level four... hiss..." Zhan Yunfei said, "He has just come to this world, yet he is already level four? How fast he improves... That's..."

He raised his head and looked at Xiao Mufei's eyes. Xiao Mufei looked strange.

Zhan Yunfei was enlightened. He shouldn't praise the young man like this. Ye Chongxiao was already too full of pride. He wouldn't want him to become arrogant. So he said, "Hmmm... Your cultivation level... That is much better than anybody else considering you are new to this world... However, for people in the Qing-Yun Realm, especially disciples in our sect, you are nothing. Unworthy of mentioning..."

Xiao Mufei coughed and looked down at the floor.

Ye Xiao was surprised.

He couldn't believe this man that he hated so much had such a funny personality. [I just ascended to this world. Why did you compare me to the cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm? Compare me to the disciples in a great sect? Are you kidding?]

[Why don't you just compare me to Wu Fa and Xuan Bing? That would definitely make me worse, wouldn't I?]

...

[1] We changed from Nine Determination Dark. The old chapters will be updated later on.

Chapter 792: Nine Exquisite Body!

Zhan Yunfei kept holding Ye Xiao's hand. He closed his eyes, as if he was trying to feel something. After a while, he shook his head and said, "Hmm. Strong blood, flexible Jing and Mai. Tough and firm. Stretchy. No hidden wounds... It's good. Dantian is full. Purple qi fills it. What you are cultivating must be an authentic martial art... That is very... well that is not bad..."

Zhan Yunfei half closed his eyes. His spiritual power ran over Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai fast. Everything about Ye Xiao's body was shown to him.

However, the power of the Boundless Space automatically hid the secret of the East-rising Purple Qi.

That was a peerless martial art in the universe. It wouldn't allow anybody else to explore it freely.

However, Zhan Yunfei felt something strange!

The next moment, he was shocked.

"Wait. This is not Natural Exquisite Body! No!" Zhan Yunfei's eyes shined with lights. He spoke with confidence. His pale face suddenly turned red of excitement. "Mufei, you are wrong."

"No? How come? That's impossible!" Xiao Mufei couldn't believe it. "I have checked so carefully. His body fits every description of Natural Exquisite Body..."

"Surely it does, because his body is Nine Exquisite Body." Zhan Yunfei made a long breath out. "Mufei, you have brought such a precious treasure to the sect this time. We did lose many disciples, but they died for great value. Nine Exquisite Body is much better than Natural Exquisite Body!"

"This young man has a perfect body, the only Nine Exquisite Body in a hundred thousand years." Zhan Yunfei's eyes were full of fever. He stared at Ye Xiao, as if he was going to swallow him alive.

"There was no record of such a body since one hundred thousand years ago..." Zhan Yunfei took in a long breath and seriously said, "This young man... may have the only Nine Exquisite Body in the history!"

"No wonder the other sects would take it so seriously to kill this man. Ten thousand years cultivation could be the reason for them to do this for sure. I just didn't know that this man has such a monster-like physical condition... Nine Exquisite Body... That is much more valuable than ten thousand years of cultivation!"

"One can spend time to get better cultivated. However, nobody can change their talent..." Zhan Yunfei nodded with great satisfaction. He let go of Ye Xiao's hand and said, "Ye Chongxiao, will you join Cold Moon Palace?"

Ye Xiao thought, [They seem nice and friendly to me so far, but if I say no to him now, they will smash me into a pile of meat!]

[No matter what, I should say yes for now.]

"I owe Elder Xiao a great favor. I am willing to join Cold Moon Palace humbly with sincerity," Ye Xiao answered peacefully. He was a bit confused though. [How come I have a Nine Exquisite Body now? How did Zhan Yunfei find out? Is this a joke?]

He then operated martial art to check his own Jing and Mai immediately.

What he found astonished himself too.

In his body, there was purple qi everywhere—in the dantian, in every corner of his Jing and Mai... He did have the legendary Nine Exquisite Body!

[What is happening? I have checked this body when I was reborn. It should be just a little above the average. It wasn't even talented. The East-rising Purple Qi has been improving my physical condition and gives me a Natural Spirit Body. It is good, but far weaker than Natural Exquisite Body and Nine Exquisite Body.]

[I might be wrong when I was first reborn, but I have checked my body again before ascending to this world. It should still be Natural Spirit Body. How come...]

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Was it... the lightning trial that changed my body?] Ye Xiao remembered that the purple qi had been operating crazily when he was taking that trial. When the lightning hit him, his body became transparent...

[It must be that trial.] Ye Xiao spoke in mind.

East-rising Purple Qi gradually improved Ye Xiao's physical condition. The power of East-rising Purple Qi was the nature's law. The lightning trial was also the power of the nature's law.

Lightning trial and the purple qi were different things but had the same nature. They both worked on Ye Xiao when he was ascending. Unexpectedly, it changed the nature of his body...

That was the only possibility that Ye Xiao could think of. The others had been through the trial too, but their bodies didn't change a bit.

Ye Xiao felt relieved thinking about that.

He agreed to join Cold Moon Palace, excitedly and kindly, but then he was lost in thoughts about the change on his body. Zhan Yunfei seemed unhappy about that. He scolded, "Ye Chongxiao, you don't know the position of Cold Moon Palace in the martial world of Qing-Yun Realm. We are a super sect that has lasted for tens of thousand years. We are one of the great sects in this realm. We are outstanding!"

"There are over thirty billion people in the realm, but there are no more than twenty big sects! Cold Moon Palace is definitely one of the ten most powerful ones!"

Zhan Yunfei frowned. "You must know. You must understand. You have just ascended to this world. To join our sect is one of the

greatest fortune you can ever have in your life! You are young and ignorant. You must not fail the blessing of heavens!"

Ye Xiao thought, [My heavens. It's like Cold Moon Palace is the No. 1 sect... You said it is one of the ten most powerful sects. That's all. Stop bragging, will you? I am in a negative position here, so I can't do anything to you. Otherwise, do you think I would play this stupid game with you now?]

...

Chapter 793: The Girl Rongrong

Ye Xiao said, "I know. I understand. I am new to this world, yet I have already realized how broad the sky can be and how high the clouds can be. I will do my best in cultivation and cherish the opportunity."

One had to bow the head while staying under another's roof.

Zhan Yunfei heard the humble answer, so he was satisfied. He turned to Xiao Mufei and said, "Do not let people in other sects know about his physical condition. Tell the over twenty disciples of yours that if anybody dares to leak this out, they will be punished with death!"

"Yes, I will! I know this is important. I have never told anybody else about Chongxiao's body!" Xiao Mufei answered.

Zhan Yunfei nodded and said, "Well done. This young man must be the hope of our bright future. We will rise and become the most powerful sect in the realm soon!" He turned to Ye Xiao and said, "Ye Chongxiao, will you bow to me and be my disciple from now on?"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[Your disciple?]

[What?]

[Bastard!]

[That can't be more blamed! How can you come up with such an idea?]

[We are deadly foes to each other in my previous life. You stabbed my thigh with your sword! I feel pain to think of it even now. Your stupid bird kept holding me, otherwise, you wouldn't have the chance to survive! Now you want to be my master? Enemy becomes master? A smile solves everything? How dare you!]

He was definitely unwilling, but... he had no other choice.

He didn't answer yet, but Xiao Mufei spoke in a low voice. "Master Zhan, that is... not quite appropriate..."

Zhan Yunfei rolled his eyes and said in a deep voice, "Why not?"

Xiao Mufei spoke in a low voice, "You must remember. A talented disciple like Chongxiao... The elders in the sect will definitely fight for him... Chongxiao is so talented. I think even the great elders, even the senior grand master... will want to be his master... If they know that you did this in advance..."

Zhan Yunfei made a weird sound.

Xiao Mufei continued, "Besides... whoever wants to be our disciple must get through the destination trial first... If you take him in before he gets through the trial... what if your martial art doesn't fit his talent... If it ruins Chongxiao's great potential, it will violate your kindness. That wouldn't be a good thing for the sect!"

Zhan Yunfei looked strange on the face. He humphed and said with anger, "Who killed our disciples? Bodacious bastards!"

He knew he couldn't forcibly recruit Ye Xiao as his own disciple, so he awkwardly changed the topic immediately. He was definitely angry, so he had to find someone else to vent the anger out of his chest.

Xiao Mufei looked gloomy and spoke in a low voice, "I reckon... the other six great sects must all be blamed!"

"Urh..." Zhan Yunfei opened his eyes wide. He was in deep in thoughts immediately. He was quite capable, but he was far weaker than Xuan Bing. If he went to the six sects to take revenge, he would very likely be punched into a pile of meat...

After thinking for a while, he gritted his teeth. His hawk nose nearly dropped off. He spoke with a vile face, "We must not waste time here. Let's move as fast as we can. Make a report to the Prime Master!"

The other six men who followed Zhan Yunfei here were all Dao Origin Stage cultivators. They were just a bit weaker than Xiao Mufei. Apparently, Cold Moon Palace was truly pissed about losing over three hundred men out here.

Over three hundred Dream Origin Stage cultivators, that was such a great loss for Cold Moon Palace, even for every other great sects!

"Now, the seven great sects will all close their gates. We have to take revenge someday later!" Xiao Mufei was furious about it, but there was no other choice.

Once a great sect closed the gate, people inside couldn't get out and nobody could get in either. Whoever truly wanted to get in the sect had to deal with the great guardian array first. To fight against the great guardian array, nobody could claim an easy win, and most of them would die. How could they take revenge if they couldn't even get in the enemies' places?

They had to put off the plan to the future. What they should do now was to go back to the sect as soon as possible. Now that they had eight Dao Origin Stage cultivators, the rest one thousand miles should be easy.

Even the six other sects together wouldn't dare to fight against these eight at the same time recklessly. They actually had the capability to destroy these eight if they fought together, but it would be too risky. Cold Moon Palace would never let go of such a great loss. The other six sects wouldn't want to risk turning Cold Moon Palace into a destined enemy just to kill a new disciple!

They thought he might die someday because of cultivating improperly anyway...

...

When the men walked to a forest, something happened. A young girl ran over staggering along and shouting, "Don't go that way..."

She might be weak and tired, or just lost her balance in the mind. She suddenly fell on the ground and blood went out from the wounds on her body.

"It's you!"

The surviving disciples all showed anger in the eyes. They held their weapons, as if they would go up there and tear the girl into pieces!

Xiao Mufei looked weird on the face.

"Who's that?" Zhan Yunfei looked cold and he sounded weird too.

He saw that girl's face at the first gaze. Even though he was calm like any other level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivators, his eyes blinked.

"That vile woman! She cheated Master Xiao earlier and poisoned him with that Nine Destination Dark!" a disciple shouted in anger. "Now she pretends to be piteous again! She must want to play the same trick again!"

"Humph! Does she believe we are all fools? How could we fall to her trap again!"

Ye Xiao frowned and looked at Xiao Mufei.

Others might not fall to her trap twice, but Xiao Mufei was different. Even though he was cheated once already, he might still go to the trap as he did the first time!

Xiao Mufei's face still looked weird. It seemed there was nothing in his sight. What he could see was only that girl.

Zhan Yunfei looked at Xiao Mufei for a while and said, "Mufei... What's your thought?"

Xiao Mufei was woken. He looked struggling and spoke in a bitter voice, "Master..."

Zhan Yunfei sighed and closed his eyes. He said, "Just go deal with it. Be careful."

Chapter 794: Why Are You So Nice to Me?

Ye Xiao was just looking at them without saying a word.

However, from what Zhan Yunfei said, Ye Xiao realized that the former had seen that girl's face already. That's why he said that. In other words, he knew so well about Xiao Mufei's past. He had definitely met Xiao Mufei's daughter before...

That was why he let Xiao Mufei deal with it himself and told him to be careful...

It was kindness from an elders to the younger generation.

Xiao Mufei walked over to the girl, and Zhan Yunfei didn't follow him. He just half closed his rather piercing eyes while looking over to the girl. His hand was holding the handle of the sword. He would take necessary moves if anything went wrong.

Ye Xiao was sure that if that girl would attack Xiao Mufei again with the same method, Xiao Mufei might still fail to defend it! No matter what the girl was planning to do, no matter how fast she could be, no matter how Xiao Mufei would react to her attack, Zhan Yunfei could definitely save him!

He could stop everything.

He could even kill that girl!

For a level eight Dao Origin Stage cultivator, it was a piece of cake!

With Zhan Yunfei around, everybody was safe!

Zhan Yunfei cared for the disciples of his sect. He cared for Xiao Mufei. Ye Xiao learned it from observation.

Actually, he had been watching everything. He watched the disciples talking to each other and tried to know how firm their relationship was...

He was trying to measure the power of this great sect from Xiao

Mufei, Zhan Yunfei and all other disciples.

Ye Xiao used to think that Cold Moon Palace must be a vicious and swashbuckling sect. However, now he realized it was wrong.

There was jealousy among the disciples, but never hatred.

For a great sect like that, it was unbelievable.

Even Zhan Yunfei, Ye Xiao's hateful enemy, was actually cute and trustworthy in the sect. It was obvious and true.

"What happened, girl?" Xiao Mufei went over and stayed down, looking at her worryingly. He reached his hand to grab the girl's wrist. He sighed. "How did you get so seriously hurt?"

He saw the girl staggering with bloody wounds on her body, but he didn't fully believe she was that badly wounded. Now he confirmed that the girl's injury was true. She bore lots of severe wounds, which revealed the bones under the skin. She was also damaged from the inside. If she didn't get treated properly soon, she might die!

Xiao Mufei didn't hesitate. He just poured the spiritual energy into her body to heal her.

The girl kept looking at him with bright eyes. She was shaking. After a while, she exhaled and spoke in a soft voice, "There... There are landmines over there... Don't go..."

Xiao Mufei's eyes lit up.

At this moment, he felt rather comforted, not because he got to know the enemy's evil plan, but because the girl didn't come to hurt him!

[She is here to warn me! She is here to save me!]

Suddenly, Xiao Mufei felt like he was beloved by his own daughter. His eyes were moistened by tears.

"Landmines... Explosive." Xiao Mufei smiled blandly. "How do you know that? Besides, what happened to you? I warned you. You

should go far away from the martial world. Do not get involved."

Xiao Mufei didn't really care about the landmines. He only cared for the girl about her wounds.

He felt like... if his daughter got bullied outside... a father had to care of her. He had to take care of the troubles for his daughter.

The girl was trembling as she leaned over to Xiao Mufei. Tears dropped down from her eyes. She was sobbing, "Can I ask you something... Why are you so nice to me? I tried to kill you. That poison should be incurable. You..."

Xiao Mufei went stiff. He stayed silent for a while and said, "I... had a daughter once... You look just like her... You have the same faces..."

The girl opened her eyes wide while staring at Xiao Mufei.

Xiao Mufei made a long sigh and turned his face over but didn't stop pouring the energy into the girl's body. He was healing the girl with full effort.

"I came here... because I failed the mission last time... I was sent over to lit the landmines. These landmines can only be lit in a short distance. There are thousands of them over there. If I lit the landmine, I won't be able to survive... So I fled..."

The girl spoke weakly, "I don't want to die... I want to live... I want a happy and leisure life..."

Xiao Mufei took a deep breath and said, "Your associates started to hunt you down?"

The girl smiled bitterly, "Yes... I didn't know I would meet you again... I just want to get away. I didn't particularly come here to warn you... But I saw you. I know I have to tell you that. You are the only person in the world who truly cares for me... even though you know you are my target..."

Xiao Mufei closed his eyes. He looked struggling. "I know. I

understand. Nobody wants to die."

The girl looked ashamed and guilty. "Sorry. I..."

A shadow flashed over. Zhan Yunfei had suddenly showed up beside them already. He spoke blandly, "She is not dying."

Xiao Mufei said, "I know. But she is still too weak. There are too many wounds on her. She is damaged from inside too..."

Zhan Yunfei looked weird on the face. He stood with his hands behind the back and asked blandly, "Lady, I am grateful that you told us about the landmines. I have to know where you are from and whom you learn your martial art from? Besides... I need to know everything about the organization behind you."

He sounded arrogant and proud. It seemed irresistible.

He sounded as if he would definitely get the answer as long as he asked for it. He believed the girl would tell him everything.

Ye Xiao frowned.

...

Chapter 795: Ye Xiao Took a Step Forward!

Zhan Yunfei was such an arrogant and nasty person, but what he asked was truly important. He had to know about his enemy and to make sure the girl wouldn't be a threat. That was the only way to keep the girl safe around them. Otherwise, even though Xiao Mufei would show mercy to her because of her face, Zhan Yunfei and the others would never allow her to live!

The girl panicked. She hesitated for a while and said, "I don't know much about the organization... I grew up in a secret base... There were a few girls who looked familiar to me earlier... They were weeded out afterwards..."

Zhan Yunfei asked, "Is it a place that specializes in raising assassins?"

"Yes." The girl's voice was weak.

Zhan Yunfei was interested. He thought for a while and said, "You said there were a few girls who got weeded out?"

The girl said, "Yes..."

Zhan Yunfei looked to the sky and stayed silent for a while. He said, "That means... You don't know which sect the secret base belongs to? This is your first mission?"

"Yes..." The girl was impressed.

[This man looked scary. He is so clever. I don't know how did he know that, but what he said is true...]

Zhan Yunfei, the clever man, had his face turn dark.

He frowned, trying to figure out something. He stopped talking.

Xiao Mufei was troubled. He didn't know what to say as he just kept pouring energy into the girl's body.

Ye Xiao suddenly spoke, "What's the size of that secret base?"

The girl looked at him strangely and said, "Very big. I don't know how to describe it."

Ye Xiao said, "How big? Can it hold ten thousand men?"

"Much bigger than that" The girl said, "The valley I stayed can at least hold thirty thousand people... As I know, there are about three and four other valleys around us..."

"Hmm. So that place is big enough to hold at least a hundred thousand people..." Ye Xiao nodded. He had a conclusion. He asked, "Those people who were taken to the place with you, were they all kids?"

"Yes."

"I guess every kid looks like to somebody else?" Ye Xiao asked. It was a strange question.

The girl answered without hesitation, "Yes. I still remember, there were always kids who looked alike that showed up together."

"After some training, when they grow up, those weaker ones will be weeded out. You will never see them again. Am I right?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Yes."

...

Ye Xiao asked quicker, and the girl answered quicker without hesitation.

Since Ye Xiao started to ask the questions one by one, Zhan Yunfei kept showing a dark face, lost in thoughts. As Ye Xiao asked more, Zhan Yunfei's face looked darker.

He didn't like it when Ye Xiao first interrupted and asked the questions, but then he was impressed as Ye Xiao asked more. He praised Ye Xiao afterwards. As more questions were answered, more things were learned.

[What a brilliant mind. How can he think so clearly.]

[My questions come from the doubts in my heart. Ye Chongxiao asked something I truly wanted to know. I didn't even realize how important the answers could be.]

[He basically piled up all small facts so as to reveal the truth behind everything!]

[How terribly wise!]

"If I am right, those men who taught you martial art and skills, you don't remember them now. When they showed up, they would wear a mask or disguise their faces, right? It is impossible for you to see their real faces, right?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Yes. How do you know that?" The girl was surprised. [How did he know all this? Was it really just a conjecture?]

"Before you, did anybody else come out for missions?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Yes."

"Many of them?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Quite a lot. Especially in the recent two years. There are lots of missions," the girl said.

"Hmm. Do you know anybody among them? Are you close to any of them?"

"Yes."

"Did they return to the place? Was anybody you know ever assigned multiple times?" Ye Xiao stared at her.

"No. Nobody has ever taken a second mission. None of them came back," the girl answered slowly this time. She seemed sad.

"Before you came out, do you know about anything about your target?"

"Not at all. A leader will tell us what to do right before the move."

"If I ask you to go back to that place, do you know the way back?"

Ye Xiao asked.

Zhan Yunfei and Xiao Mufei were both shocked.

That was the key!

"I don't." The girl panicked. "When I went to that valley, I was eight... I have never come out since then until now. Even before this mission, I was blocked in some acupuncture points and fed with drugs. I was unconscious. When I woke up, I was already outside, in a strange place. This mission was the first time I have ever connected to the outside world since I was eight. I don't know how to go back to the place. I don't know the location."

"Hmm. How do you communicate with each other?" Ye Xiao asked, "Secret signal? Marks? Special signs? Something like that. Do you have anything to show them your identity?"

"No, nothing." The girl said, "They can find me. I got a space ring full of good stuff earlier, thanks to you guys. It should be enough for me to have a happy afterlife. I did want to leave, but they found me the next morning and told me to continue the mission. If I don't, they will kill me!"

"I see. What is your name? I mean... Your real name?" Ye Xiao asked.

...

Chapter 796: Be My Daughter!

"I don't remember... I don't remember anything... I don't know my name..." The girl looked so sad. "The only thing I can remember is that I was begging on the street. After that, I was in the valley. They said my name was Rongrong... I don't know what is my real name..."

The girl sobbed with tears.

"You lived there for so many years. Do you have a title that distinguishes you from other girls? A title that only represents you!" Ye Xiao asked another important question.

The girl looked confused and then she said, "Yes, I do. I have a number. It is... Seventy-nine thousand five hundred ninety-six!"

Seventy-nine thousand five hundred ninety-six!

That number shocked Zhan Yunfei! His pupils shrank!

It was too huge a number!

Ye Xiao conjectured a flurry image of the entire organization, yet he was still shocked by the number.

"Then, among those people that you know in that place, is there anybody that looks alike to him?" Ye Xiao pointed at Zhan Yunfei.

Zhan Yunfei was speechless. Then he interrupted, "I don't have kids!"

The girl looked at Zhan Yunfei and shook her head slowly. "No, there isn't."

Ye Xiao answered with 'hmm' and said, "I am done. Elder, do you have any other questions?"

He looked at Zhan Yunfei.

Zhan Yunfei wanted to say something but only sighed. He said, "You have asked over twenty important questions that I didn't

think of. That's enough..."

He sounded sad.

He looked at Ye Xiao and unwillingly spoke a few words, "The younger generation will surpass the older indeed!"

Then he took a big step ahead to the girl and asked arrogantly, "Girl, do you have any other place to go?"

"No. They will find me no matter where I go..." The girl feared Zhan Yunfei from the bottom of her heart.

[This man is like an ice sculpture in human shape. He is full of cold murderous qi that keeps people away.]

"Do you have any relatives?" Zhan Yunfei asked fiercely.

"No..."

"Are you afraid?" Zhan Yunfei continued.

"I..." The girl was trembling.

"Are you scared?" Zhan Yunfei said.

"I..." Her teeth were trembling.

"I can arrange somewhere for you to stay. You can live a peaceful life. Nobody will find you. How about that?" Zhan Yunfei smiled.

For the girl, it was like a smile on a demon's face.

That hawk nose scared her so much...

What he said should be such a beautiful song to her, but in her ears, it was horrible like the whisper of devils!

Ye Xiao didn't understand. [Does he know how to smile? It is fine that you don't know how to smile, or your smile is ugly, terrible, terrifying, but you smile like that... It is wrong to scare people!]

"I... Where... Where can I go..." Her teeth kept trembling. She couldn't even say a complete sentence. Her face was pale because she was injured. It was getting worse because she was scared by

Zhan Yunfei.

"You came to kill him. He nearly died because of you..." Zhan Yunfei pointed at Xiao Mufei and said, "You owe him. He had been living a vagabond life since he was a kid. Luckily, he had a wife. But she was killed a few years after they got married, leaving a five years old daughter. His daughter was killed when she was eighteen."

"Ah?" The girl was shocked. She looked at Xiao Mufei with regret and sympathy in the eyes. She didn't know that this man had been through such a miserable life, and she nearly killed him with poison.

"Now that you have nowhere else to go, like you said earlier, they will find you no matter where you go. Maybe they will kill you immediately when they find you."

Zhan Yunfei said confidently, "I guess you know why he is so nice to you now. Heavens bless you with a face that looks like his daughter. That is destiny that brings you two together. From now on, you just stay with him, be his daughter. Your name remains Rongrong. A lonely old man and a solitary daughter. It is perfect."

"Ah?" The girl raised her head while looking at Zhan Yunfei. She was shocked.

Zhan Yunfei spoke in a terrifying voice, "What? You don't want to?"

It should be such a good idea for both Xiao Mufei and the girl. However, Zhan Yunfei made it sound like forcing a young girl to prostitute herself.

The girl slowly turned her head to look at Xiao Mufei. She was a bit shy and worried. There was a complex expression on her face. She seemed longing for something... [Am I... Am I going to have a home? A father?]

...

Xiao Mufei couldn't believe what was happening though. He wasn't quite sure about what he wanted yet. He was excited. He wanted to say something but just coughed.

His cough was shaking. Finally, he asked, "Well... Girl, do you... want to be my daughter? Do you want me to be your father?"

The girl was shaking. Tears filled her eyes. She felt extremely happy from the bottom of her heart. She spoke in a shaking voice, "Do... Do you truly forgive me... Do you..."

With tears in Xiao Mufei's eyes, he smiled in a clumsy way. He nodded heavily.

The girl struggled and got up, and then she kneeled in front of Xiao Mufei. She kowtowed to him sincerely and solemnly. It looked sacred and serious. Her body was shaking, but she tried not to. Tears dropped down from her eyes. "Father!"

Xiao Mufei laughed loudly with tears on his face. He held Rongrong up and said, "Good girl... Come on, get up... You and me... We stay with each other in Qing-Yun Realm from now on!"

"Your family name is Xiao. Your full name is Xiao Rongrong... Rongrong..." Xiao Mufei's voice was shaking. "My good kid..."

"Father..." The girl felt the sincere concern from Xiao Mufei. She couldn't help holding him in the arms and crying out with tears.

[From now on, I have a family.]

[I have a home.]

[I have a father.]

[It feels so good.]

[This is the first time to call somebody father. I have dream about my parents countless times in my life. I spoke the words 'father' and 'mother' so many times in the night...]

[There was never response.]

[Now there is.]

[This is family. This is father! I can feel it!]

[Happiness!]

Xiao Mufei was weeping. He spoke slowly, "You might live in danger for your entire life. From now on, I won't let you get hurt!"

"I will never... let anybody hurt you!"

It was a vow!

He spoke it even in a fierce way!

It felt like he was making a vow to his departed daughter too!

...

Chapter 797: The Other Side of Zhan Yunfei's Personality!

A big smile showed up on Zhan Yunfei's face. "Now you have kowtowed to your father. What gift should a father give to his daughter?"

He thought he was making a soft and warm smile, but it actually scared many of the others. It was such a terrible smile!

Xiao Mufei reached in the pocket trying to find something. He said, "Sure. I should give my girl something..."

He couldn't help sobbing with tears.

Ye Xiao kept looking at what was happening. He noticed that Zhan Yunfei showed a bit jealousy in his eyes... just for seconds...

Zhan Yunfei, a master to Xiao Mufei. He knew how miserable Xiao Mufei's life was.

It was such a good opportunity to bring something good to Xiao Mufei's life. He decisively decided to do this for him...

It solved a big problem for Xiao Mufei after all.

As he saw Xiao Mufei and his daughter hug each other, he knew he should feel happy for him, but he felt a bit sad and jealous too... However, he held the emotion deep in his heart and started to laugh loud.

Looking at Xiao Mufei and his daughter, Zhan Yun pretended to be disgusted and said, "Oh come on... Ye Chongxiao, you and I, we should have some secret talk over there. Let's have a good talk. I am going to tell you something about this realm. You will be eye opened!"

Zhan Yunfei walked away and Ye Xiao followed.

A few days earlier, Ye Xiao was full of hatred against Zhan Yunfei. He swore to heavens many times that he would kill Zhan Yunfei with one strike at the first sight of him!

However, he didn't feel angry at all, facing Zhan Yunfei's arrogance.

Maybe Ye Xiao clearly felt that Zhan Yunfei was pretending to be a fastidious prick. Zhan Yunfei was actually solitary, lonely and pathetic.

Even though he stood up straight and always played tough.

For Ye Xiao, Zhan Yunfei was like an awkward old piteous old man walking away from the crowd.

He didn't look like a bright huge sword like he tried to be before.

Ye Xiao felt something.

He was lost.

As Ye Xiao remembered in his previous life, Zhan Yunfei should be vicious, cruel, cold-blooded and evil. He would do anything just to reach his goal.

He was fierce like a lonely wolf in the grassland, also like a cunning fox.

All in all, there was nothing good in his personality!

However, Zhan Yunfei was trying to hide something of his personality. He could feel that under this man's cold heart, there was warmth.

He could be vicious and cruel to the enemy, but also be extremely caring for his own people. He would do something special and awkward for his sect's disciple.

That was what he did for Xiao Mufei.

Ye Xiao had a complex feeling about this. Suddenly, he relived the feeling when he was fighting against Zhan Yunfei in the

previous life...

Zhan Yunfei used other's body to defend the attacks. When that poor guy died, he suddenly jumped out from behind that dead body and stabbed his sword deep into Ye Xiao's thigh...

Blood splashed!

Ye Xiao could still vividly feel the pain on his thigh. It was from the deep bottom of his memory.

Zhan Yunfei used his living ally's body to protect himself and damage the enemy... It was a right thing to do for the victory, but it was also vicious and cold-blooded.

Zhan Yunfei got seriously hurt by Ye Xiao after that sword stabbing. His soul beast kept holding Ye Xiao to buy him time to escape. Before he got away, in his eyes, there was full of hatred. He truly didn't want his beast to die!

Zhan Yunfei noticed Ye Chongxiao was lost in thoughts.

He stopped moving to look at Ye Xiao. He was confused. He couldn't believe this young man who had just arrived to this realm actually lost in thoughts at such circumstance.

He thought Ye Chongxiao should be so thrilled and wondering as he was about to teach this young man something important in this world. How come the young man was actually lost in his own thoughts?

"What are you thinking?" Zhan Yunfei sounded cold and arrogant, like he was talking to Ye Xiao from a high position that Ye Xiao couldn't reach.

Ye Xiao had seen through Zhan Yunfei's personality. The way he talked, acted, his attitude... They were all Zhan Yunfei's disguise.

Whoever was congenial to Zhan Yunfei would become his friend very easily and quickly. He was a good man deep in the heart, who would always care for his friends.

In another word, regardless of what he had done in Ye Xiao's previous life, no matter he was good or evil, he was definitely a trustworthy friend!

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "I am thinking about what just happened."

Zhan Yunfei said, "Oh?"

Ye Xiao smiled, "Elder Xiao has been solitary for his whole life. Luckily, he has you who truly cares for him. You know everything about his life. You did that for him. You forgave the girl and used this opportunity to fix Xiao's life. You did a great job. It's awesome. I can't help recalling it in my head. You surely just wanted to do that for Xiao. It is just so well done."

Zhan Yunfei was stunned. He said, "Hmm. So that's what you've been thinking. I thought you were thinking about something else..."

He then was lost in thoughts. Apparently he was touched by what Ye Xiao just said.

After a while, he sighed and said, "Isn't it beautiful to fix one's broken life... Heh heh... There are countless regrets in people's lives... If only everything could be fixed..."

He stared at a forest and didn't say anything.

The setting sun shined upon the trees, making golden glows. The tree leaves seemed to be transparent.

He stared at the leaves and eventually made a long and deep sigh, as if he was exhaling the sorrow of his entire life. He said, "If I can fix it... Let alone being some stupid Dao Origin Stage cultivator... I wouldn't even want to be god if I could... Ah..."

...

Chapter 798: Gain And Loss!

Ye Xiao was moved. This moment reminded him of Jun Yinglian. He made a few deep sighs too and spoke with sadness, "That's true... Everybody wants a life without pain and regret... However, life doesn't go as we want... As long as we are living, we have to move on. There will be lots of pain and troubles. There will be something we don't want happening in our lives. There will be full of regrets. When we turn over and look back to the past, finally, we realize how much we have already missed...

"Even when we finally wake up and realize it, there is no way to get back what we have lost, no matter how regretful we are...

"We have so many reasons and lots of sighs. The most ironic thing is... when we are right in the middle of a beautiful life we long for, we never cherish it, until it fades away... Life is full of choices, gains and losses...

"We kept getting things, but also losing those we had. You get this, so you lose that... When you lose what you had, you are still enjoying the happiness of getting the new. You won't realize that something extraordinarily beautiful in your life has vanished until it is too late."

"When you finally realize it and want to fix it, you can't, even if you sacrifice your life. At this moment, you find that what you have gotten is merely nothing... compared to what you have lost."

Ye Xiao looked at the leaves Zhan Yunfei was staring at too. He said, "Superior cultivators in the martial world, or solitary cultivators, or ordinary people... We are all the same.

"Ordinary people toil so hard to continue living. They are always busy to make a living. When they are young, they get married and fight for money and fame... However, when they finally get what they are chasing, looking back to the people besides them, their wives had become ugly old women... Some already died...

"Only when that moment comes do they realize the wealth, fame and achievements they gain, can never buy them their youth, and their beloved ones. They can't even buy one day with their beloved ones...

"They frown when they are just living the most beautiful lives they can ever have in their lives, because they are worrying about the money, fame and their position in the world..."

"Maybe the leaves are the luckiest creature in the world." Ye Xiao looked at the leaves, which were shining with golden glow because of the setting sun. He said, "From a baby tree to a big tree, from light green to dark green, till it become withered and fall to the ground turning into dirt... they barely feel anything. They have no emotions. They face wind, snow and rain... They never feel pain..."

"Ah..."

Ye Xiao made a long sigh to end the talk.

He was still lost in thoughts.

Zhan Yunfei had been listening to him quietly since Ye Xiao started to talk. He was surprised. The more Ye Xiao talked, the more the expression on Zhan Yunfei's face changed.

Approval, sadness, regret, lost, despair...

Ye Xiao's words seemed to reflect Zhan Yunfei's life. Zhan Yunfei was moved, as if he relived his life. At the moment, there was only grief on his face. He might cry out with tears at any second!

After a while, Zhan Yunfei said, "You are not a leaf. How do you know the leaf has no feelings?"

"How do you know whether it feels scared when the storm rolls on it from the day it grew upon the earth?"

"When a leaf was just a bud, it had no veins, or maybe it had veins but we couldn't see it. However, the bitter experience in its life makes it grow stronger and stronger, bringing more and more

veins in it. It strongly connects to the tree, so as to protect itself from the storms...

"Even a leaf has lots of toughness in its life."

Zhan Yunfei calmed down a bit after speaking about this. He smiled. "However, you are right. In the martial world, sometimes a person's life has less value than a leaf.

"At least this leaf has two people caring about it right now. If it knows this, it must feel honored. However, in the martial world, when one is killed... others will only feel relieved... even gloating!

"What a dead man could leave to the world is just a lesson. That is all..."

Zhan Yunfei made a long sigh. He took a deep breath, as if he exhaling all the depression in his chest away.

It didn't only exhale out the negative emotions in his heart, but actually made a whirlwind like a long dragon blowing to the forest. The leaves on the trees were all falling off.

There was no leaf on the trees anymore.

Including the leaf he had been looking at earlier.

Life was unpredictable. Life was changing. Because of this conversation, all those leaves were blown off the trees and fell to the ground. Nothing survived!

The next moment, Zhan Yunfei turned around to look at Ye Xiao. He spoke seriously, "I never thought a young man like you could have such a deep understanding of life. Have you been through too much in the realm you were born?"

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. "Like I said, people know many things, but they will still regret and sigh. It doesn't matter how old or how young I am. What matters is... how much did I come through in my life.

"Some people understand many things just in minutes!

"Some people are living so happily even though they are hundreds years old. They are still pure and young in their hearts. Because they haven't encountered any suffering yet...

"I... I may look young, but I am from a lower realm after all. I have been through a lot to ascend to this realm." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "I am weak in cultivation indeed. Maybe I am just like an ant in this realm, however, I was once like a king in the realm I come from. I was once on top of the entire world looking down upon everything else. I was invincible."

...

Chapter 799: What Do You See?

"To get such an achievement in my age, how many fights, how many deaths, how many things should one get through... Nobody else can feel what I feel. Only those who lived in it understand it."

Zhan Yunfei stayed silent for a while and then said, "You are right. I forgot that you are not a native here. You are from the lower realm."

"That's right. You are young, yet you have ascended from the lower realm to Qing-Yun Realm. You must be talented, firm and persistent. You must have been through lots of troubles that nobody could imagine..."

"That's why you can think of those questions to ask that girl." Zhan Yunfei rolled his eyes. His eyes glowed in sharp lights. He said, "Well, Ye Chongxiao, what conclusion do you have after she answered all your questions?"

Ye Xiao thought for a while carefully in the heart. He said, "Elder Zhan, the answers to my questions earlier only scared me."

"Oh?"

"This is so horrible. I don't even have the courage to dig deeper!"

"Really? How so?" Zhan Yunfei looked solemn.

"Think about it. That girl said that there were a few girls who looked just like her... They were weeded out... We know what that means. In other words, it shows us that she is the one that looks like Xiao Mufei's daughter the most. She is the best."

"What they want from the girl is the death of Xiao Mufei. Nothing else, nothing more!"

"There are lots of people they have that are just like this girl. Think about her number. Seventy-nine thousand five hundred ninety-six. There are at least nearly a hundred thousand assassins

like her!"

"Each assassin had one particular target! All those assassins are designed to kill a particular person."

"They raise the kids since they were little. They might look like somebody's wife, daughter, son or closest disciple... They could be anybody."

"I reckon they all have the same mission in their lives. They must replace the ones they look like. It would be less effective if their simulated objects are alive after all. They might get strongly resisted if they tried to show up as somebody else."

"As long as they have a good assassin to replace somebody in the world, the real person must be missing... Only when they are gone can the assassins show up to get on the mission."

What Ye Xiao said seemed reasonable, but it was unclear and confusing.

The simulated object, the assassin, the target, this person, that person...

However, Zhan Yunfei was carefully listening. He actually understood it. He nodded and praised, "Impressive. Please go on."

"Take this assassination against Elder Xiao as an example. Everybody held great suspicion on the wrecked carriage, dying old man and weeping girl, except Elder Xiao. It was obviously a trap. However, Elder Xiao didn't care. He stepped in it anyway. Everyone else felt it unbelievable. Elder Xiao is such an experienced man. How could he not see the trick behind all that!

"In fact, Elder Xiao knew it was a trap for the first sight. I was right on Elder Xiao's side. At first, he was calm and steady. What he thought was to send somebody to kill the stupid assassins. However...

"The name Rongrong... It broke Elder Xiao's heart. It touched the softest part of his heart. Even though he knew it was a trap, the

girl was an assassin and she had nothing to do with his daughter, just had the same name and a similar face, he still fell into it. The girl looked just like his daughter. That was all he cares!

"What happened after that was simple. Elder Xiao got hit. I had something that could luckily deal with that Nine Destination Dark. Otherwise, Elder Xiao should be dead. It was a perfect assassination to kill Elder Xiao.

"After he was hit, he still asked others to let that girl leave. He even gave that girl so many things so that she could live a peaceful life in the future. He was kind. However, it showed a terrifying truth about that assassination organization. No matter how powerful their target was, they would succeed!

"That was why they would spend so much resources and time to raise these assassins. They use the soft parts of people's hearts, they use the people's deep emotions to kill them! It is such an unsolvable, dangerous, and deadly assassination! It uses the weakness of humanity!"

"There is actually such an assassination organization in the world. It is horrible. They are patient and rich. What they do is unbelievable but efficient. They must have some evil plan!

"The other thing about this organization I care about is the massive scale of it!

"They have over a hundred thousand assassins!"

"How many people they need to train and raise so many assassins?" Ye Xiao said, "That is unbelievably large!"

"The assassins they are training are all designed to kill particular people. Those people must be famous figures in the realm. It is not an easy thing to investigate the background of all the famous figures in the world. It is easy to draw the targeted people's attention. Those men were all strong figures. They were normally hundreds of times more cautious than normal people. What we are

talking here is an intelligence network based on a hundred thousand people!

"There must be a huge intelligence force behind this organization. It must be bigger, stronger and better! This intelligence network must be covering the entire martial world, even the entire realm!"

...

Chapter 800: Terrifying!

Zhan Yunfei took a deep breath. He nodded to agree at what Ye Xiao just said.

"Why don't we make a further conjecture. Did somebody kill Elder Xiao's daughter on purpose? Did these people kill his daughter?"

"If we go along this conclusion... Well... These people... This giant organization... In order to make a perfect chance for their assassins to show up, they need more people to kill those simulated objects in advance. They create tragedy... so as to create a weak point in those strong figures heart.

"That is the only way they can make their assassins play a perfect role in the assassination.

"That means they have a totally hidden assassination group."

"On the other side, they need more people to cooperate with the assassins they are training. That old man is an example. In fact, he triggered the entire assassination. If he didn't call the girl 'Rongrong' loudly, Elder Xiao might not notice her. They might both get killed by the others before they had the chance to get close to Elder Xiao. This old man also played an important role. He was also a good cultivator!"

Zhan Yunfei nodded. He looked terrible.

"So, there are over a hundred thousand simulating assassins, a strong assassination group, and a great intelligence network. All these made a perfect assassination success!

"To raise and train the one hundred thousand people, they must have a huge amount of manpower, a huge place to live, lots of food to eat, countless materials to improve their martial arts. That is an enormous expense... There must be over two hundred thousand people in those valleys.

"Besides, there must be over two hundred thousand people working in the intelligence network. Otherwise, it couldn't cover it so widely.

"The hidden assassination group must have over a hundred thousand people.

"So, what we are talking about is a mysterious force that may have over a million people!"

"It is a great expense to keep everything running every day." Ye Xiao said, "So they must have a way to make money and get resources."

"I am new to this world, but I know something about this world. In Qing-Yun Realm, a normal person needs only gold and silver to exchange goods in the market. It is not so difficult to get gold and silver. However... to get materials for cultivation, one must have spiritual stones.

"So, this huge organization must have a great business in the world, that can earn enough money for their daily expense.

"They need a way to get the materials. Channels of resources are always held by some special forces. These forces may not be very powerful, but they are good at obtaining resources.

"These are not enough for such a big organization though. Such organization must have enormous ambition.

"If they accidentally mess with some super powerful cultivator, one particular powerful cultivator can wipe them out at once. That is why they must have a marvelous martial power as their protection."

"In this world, I guess not many sects can do such a great thing." Ye Xiao said, "One person, two great halls, three palaces and seven sects. One of these people."

"There are no other people who can build up and maintain such a great organization and ambition!"

"To put it frankly, the other sects are not qualified!"

Ye Xiao took a long breath. "According to what we know now, I am sure they have already made many tragic cases. They must have killed many people, who were families, friends, disciples, associates of some influential figures..."

As Ye Xiao spoke to this point, Zhan Yunfei's face twitched painfully, as if he was grabbed tightly on the heart. He looked painful and terrible.

"Moreover, they are targeting the elites of the sects. That means what they want is never just money. They kill for some great purpose... I can think of one great purpose. To conquer the entire Qing-Yun Realm!"

Ye Xiao finally made a conclusion.

"They have controlled roughly seventy percent of the influential figures' weak points in the heart. At least seventy percent. No matter how vicious and brutal those men are, they are still too weak to kill their own children..."

"That is the key to that organization's success!"

"Once they set up traps like they did to Elder Xiao over the entire realm, Qing-Yun Realm will definitely fall into chaos and blood!"

"At that moment, lots of the cultivators who should be difficult to defeat will fall for different reasons..."

"After these figures fall, somebody will take their place to become the controlling league of the realm..." Ye Xiao said, "Like Cold Moon Palace, if all the Dao Origin Stage cultivators in our sect die one day... what next? Those who survive, what will they think of it? Everybody lives in fear. People may get killed by their most beloved ones. Who can they trust?"

Zhan Yunfei gritted his teeth and said, "If that happens one day, some vile people will swallow everything we built! We will fall into perdition!"

"Yes. I guess that is what they want." Ye Xiao took a long breath out. "That's why I said when I heard her answers, I only felt scared.

"This is the most vicious, ambitious, terrible, scary, cruel, and cold-blooded plan I have ever heard in my life!"

Ye Xiao spoke word by word, "Everything is well planned. One after another, step by step. This is the most vicious plan in the history! The most terrifying!"

...

Table of Contents

[Realms In The Firmament](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701: Full Attack!](#)

[Chapter 702: Different Perspectives](#)

[Chapter 703: Ye Xiao? Ye Xiao?](#)

[Chapter 704: Lousy Idea!](#)

[Chapter 705: Enough!](#)

[Chapter 706: Princess Came For Visit!](#)

[Chapter 707: Disclaim!](#)

[Chapter 708: We Won't See It!](#)

[Chapter 709: Deal!](#)

[Chapter 710: Important People!](#)

[Chapter 711: Ashamed!](#)

[Chapter 712: Fire Attack!](#)

[Chapter 713: Battle Out!](#)

[Chapter 714: I Get It!](#)

[Chapter 715: Sorry!](#)

[Chapter 716: Rolling Fire](#)

[Chapter 717: The Extreme Cold!](#)

[Chapter 718: Gods Want Me Dead!](#)

[Chapter 719: Nine Thousand Miles Hunt!](#)

[Chapter 720: Glorious Victory](#)

[Chapter 721: Is It Fate?](#)

[Chapter 722: Trembling Land of Han-Yang!](#)

[Chapter 723: Peerless!](#)

[Chapter 724: For You!](#)

[Chapter 725: Peerless Affectionate Guy?](#)

[Chapter 726: A Great Disturbance!](#)

[Chapter 727: Counterattack of Wuji!](#)

[Chapter 728: Purge!](#)

[Chapter 729: Fury for the Loss of Opportunity!](#)

[Chapter 730: Grab A Grandson!](#)

[Chapter 731: A Great Plan!](#)

[Chapter 732: Mainstay!](#)

[Chapter 733: Hero Father, Hero Son!](#)

[Chapter 734: Dote!](#)

[Chapter 735: Obsessed in Cultivation!](#)

[Chapter 736: Ready to Hatch!](#)

[Chapter 737: Primal Creature!](#)

[Chapter 738: You Are Brother Egg?](#)

[Chapter 739: Get A Name?](#)

[Chapter 740: Erhuo](#)

[Chapter 741: Unequal Treaty](#)

[Chapter 742: Erhuo and Fish!](#)

[Chapter 743: Weird Theft](#)

[Chapter 744: Father and Son!](#)

[Chapter 745: Ye Nantian's Worry](#)

[Chapter 746: Ascension to Qing-Yun Realm!](#)

[Chapter 747: Ascension Day!](#)

[Chapter 748: Polar Ice River!](#)

[Chapter 749: Golden-scaled Dragon Fish!](#)

[Chapter 750: Coveted](#)

[Chapter 751: Thousands Meter Ice; Golden Dragon!](#)

[Chapter 752: Unlucky Dude!](#)

[Chapter 753: Mia!](#)

[Chapter 754: Accidentally!](#)

[Chapter 755: Snatch!](#)

[Chapter 756: I Am Ye Chongxiao!](#)

[Chapter 757: Just A Cat!](#)

[Chapter 758: The Three Factions!](#)

[Chapter 759: Allies They Said](#)

[Chapter 760: Nature Exquisite Body?](#)

[Chapter 761: Unable to Escape!](#)

[Chapter 762: Dark Pine Forest](#)

[Chapter 763: Danger!](#)

[Chapter 764: Silve-scaled Golden-caruncled Snake!](#)

[Chapter 765: Crowd of Snakes!](#)

[Chapter 766: Surprise; Suggestions!](#)

[Chapter 767: Golden Caruncle, the Weak Point!](#)

[Chapter 768: Snake King!](#)

[Chapter 769: Eliminate the King!](#)

[Chapter 770: Predicament!](#)

[Chapter 771: Go, Erhuo, Go!](#)

[Chapter 772: Silent Kill!](#)

[Chapter 773: Stockpile](#)

[Chapter 774: Another Ambush!](#)

[Chapter 775: Real Killing Strike!](#)

[Chapter 776: Assassination Attempt and Assassinating!](#)

[Chapter 777: A Moment of Peace!](#)

[Chapter 778: Weird Carriage!](#)

[Chapter 779: Let Her Go!](#)

[Chapter 780: I Am A Dan-Maker!](#)

[Chapter 781: You Won't Die With Me Around!](#)

[Chapter 782: Painful Experience!](#)

[Chapter 783: Life-risk Recommendation Letter](#)

[Chapter 784: Die For You!](#)

[Chapter 785: It Was Saint Sunlight Sect!](#)

[Chapter 786: Remember the Kindness; Remember the Hatred!](#)

[Chapter 787: That Man!](#)

[Chapter 788: Unforeseen Event!](#)

[Chapter 789: Myth!](#)

[Chapter 790: Zhan Yunfei!](#)

[Chapter 791: Unworthy of Mentioning?](#)

[Chapter 792: Nine Exquisite Body!](#)

[Chapter 793: The Girl Rongrong](#)

[Chapter 794: Why Are You So Nice to Me?](#)

[Chapter 795: Ye Xiao Took a Step Forward!](#)

[Chapter 796: Be My Daughter!](#)

[Chapter 797: The Other Side of Zhan Yunfei's Personality!](#)

[Chapter 798: Gain And Loss!](#)

[Chapter 799: What Do You See?](#)

[Chapter 800: Terrifying!](#)